# MEMOIRS 

American Mathematical Society
Number 740

# Mutual Invadability Implies Coexistence in Spatial Models 

Rick Durrett



March 2002 • Volume 156 • Number 740 (first of 5 numbers) • ISSN 0065-9266

## Selected Titles in This Series

740 Rick Durrett, Mutual invadability implies coexistence in spatial models, 2002
739 Georgios K. Alexopoulos, Sub-Laplacians with drift on Lie groups of polynomial volume growth, 2002
738 Yasuro Gon, Generalized Whittaker functions on $S U(2,2)$ with respect to the Siegel parabolic subgroup, 2002
737 Arjen Doelman, Robert A. Gardner, and Tasso J. Kaper, A stability index analysis of 1-D patterns of the Gray-Scott model, 2002
736 Wojciech Chachólski and Jérôme Scherer, Homotopy theory of diagrams, 2002
735 Martina Brück, Xi Du, Joonsang Park, and Chuu-Lian Terng, The submanifold geometries associated to Grassmannian systems, 2002
734 Michel Van den Bergh, Blowing up of non-commutative smooth surfaces, 2001
733 Milé Krajčevski, Tilings of the plane, hyperbolic groups and small cancellation conditions, 2001
732 Jan O. Kleppe, Juan C. Migliore, Rosa Miró-Roig, Uwe Nagel, and Chris Peterson, Gorenstein liaison, complete intersection liaison invariants and unobstructedness, 2001
731 Jesús Bastero, Mario Milman, and Francisco J. Ruiz, On the connection between weighted norm inequalities, commutators and real interpolation, 2001
730 Suhyoung Choi, The decomposition and classification of radiant affine 3-manifolds, 2001
729 Michael Grosser, Eva Farkas, Michael Kunzinger, and Roland Steinbauer, On the foundations of nonlinear generalized functions I and II, 2001
728 Laura Smithies, Equivariant analytic localization of group representations, 2001
727 Anthony D. Blaom, A geometric setting for Hamiltonian perturbation theory, 2001
726 Victor L. Shapiro, Singular quasilinearity and higher eigenvalues, 2001
725 Jean-Pierre Rosay and Edgar Lee Stout, Strong boundary values, analytic functionals, and nonlinear Paley-Wiener theory, 2001
724 Lisa Carbone, Non-uniform lattices on uniform trees, 2001
723 Deborah M. King and John B. Strantzen, Maximum entropy of cycles of even period, 2001
722 Hernán Cendra, Jerrold E. Marsden, and Tudor S. Ratiu, Lagrangian reduction by stages, 2001
721 Ingrid C. Bauer, Surfaces with $K^{2}=7$ and $p_{g}=4,2001$
720 Palle E. T. Jorgensen, Ruelle operators: Functions which are harmonic with respect to a transfer operator, 2001
719 Steve Hofmann and John L. Lewis, The Dirichlet problem for parabolic operators with singular drift terms, 2001
718 Bernhard Lani-Wayda, Wandering solutions of delay equations with sine-like feedback, 2001
717 Ron Brown, Frobenius groups and classical maximal orders, 2001
716 John H. Palmieri, Stable homotopy over the Steenrod algebra, 2001
715 W. N. Everitt and L. Markus, Multi-interval linear ordinary boundary value problems and complex symplectic algebra, 2001
714 Earl Berkson, Jean Bourgain, and Aleksander Pełczynski, Canonical Sobolev projections of weak type ( 1,1 ), 2001
713 Dorina Mitrea, Marius Mitrea, and Michael Taylor, Layer potentials, the Hodge Laplacian, and global boundary problems in nonsmooth Riemannian manifolds, 2001
712 Raúl E. Curto and Woo Young Lee, Joint hyponormality of Toeplitz pairs, 2001
711 V. G. Kac, C. Martinez, and E. Zelmanov, Graded simple Jordan superalgebras of growth one, 2001
(Continued in the back of this publication)

## This page intentionally left blank

## Mutual Invadability Implies Coexistence in Spatial Models

## This page intentionally left blank

# MEmoirs of the <br> American Mathematical Society 

Number 740

# Mutual Invadability Implies Coexistence in Spatial Models 

Rick Durrett



[^0]
## American Mathematical Society

Providence, Rhode Island

## Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Durrett, Richard, 1951-
Mutual invadability implies coexistence in spatial models / Rick Durrett. p. cm. - (Memoirs of the American Mathematical Society, ISSN 0065-9266; no. 740)
"March 2002, vol. 156, number 740 (first of 5 numbers)."
Includes bibliographical references.
ISBN 0-8218-2768-5 (alk. paper)

1. Stochastic processes. 2. Reaction-diffusion equations. 3. Biology—Mathematical models. I. Title. II. Series.

QA3.A57 no. 740
[QA274.3]
$510 \mathrm{~s}-\mathrm{dc} 21$
[519.2]
2001056086

## Memoirs of the American Mathematical Society

This journal is devoted entirely to research in pure and applied mathematics.
Subscription information. The 2002 subscription begins with volume 155 and consists of six mailings, each containing one or more numbers. Subscription prices for 2002 are $\$ 524$ list, $\$ 419$ institutional member. A late charge of $10 \%$ of the subscription price will be imposed on orders received from nonmembers after January 1 of the subscription year. Subscribers outside the United States and India must pay a postage surcharge of $\$ 31$; subscribers in India must pay a postage surcharge of $\$ 43$. Expedited delivery to destinations in North America $\$ 35$; elsewhere $\$ 130$. Each number may be ordered separately; please specify number when ordering an individual number. For prices and titles of recently released numbers, see the New Publications sections of the Notices of the American Mathematical Society.

Back number information. For back issues see the AMS Catalog of Publications.
Subscriptions and orders should be addressed to the American Mathematical Society, P. O. Box 845904, Boston, MA 02284-5904. All orders must be accompanied by payment. Other correspondence should be addressed to Box 6248, Providence, RI 02940-6248.

Copying and reprinting. Individual readers of this publication, and nonprofit libraries acting for them, are permitted to make fair use of the material, such as to copy a chapter for use in teaching or research. Permission is granted to quote brief passages from this publication in reviews, provided the customary acknowledgment of the source is given.

Republication, systematic copying, or multiple reproduction of any material in this publication is permitted only under license from the American Mathematical Society. Requests for such permission should be addressed to the Acquisitions Department, American Mathematical Society, P. O. Box 6248, Providence, Rhode Island 02940-6248. Requests can also be made by e-mail to reprint-permission@ams.org.

Memoirs of the American Mathematical Society is published bimonthly (each volume consisting usually of more than one number) by the American Mathematical Society at 201 Charles Street, Providence, RI 02904-2294. Periodicals postage paid at Providence, RI. Postmaster: Send address changes to Memoirs, American Mathematical Society, P. O. Box 6248, Providence, RI 02940-6248.
(c) 2002 by the American Mathematical Society. All rights reserved.

This publication is indexed in Science Citation Index ${ }^{\circledR}$, SciSearch ${ }^{\circledR}$, Research Alert ${ }^{\circledR}$, CompuMath Citation Index ${ }^{\circledR}$, Current Contents ${ }^{\circledR} /$ Physical, Chemical \& Earth Sciences. Printed in the United States of America.
© The paper used in this book is acid-free and falls within the guidelines established to ensure permanence and durability.
Visit the AMS home page at URL: http://www.ams.org/

$$
10987654321 \quad 070605040302
$$

## CONTENTS

Introduction ..... 1
Example 1. Predator-prey modelsExample 2. Epidemic models

1. Perturbation of one-dimensional systems ..... 12
2. Two-species Examples ..... 17
Example 2.1. Linear competition with exclusion
Example 2.2. Two-stage contact process
Example 2.3. Diploid genetics
Example 2.4. One-dimensional systems
Example 2.5. Linear competition without exclusion
3. Lower bounding lemmas for PDE ..... 34
4. Perturbation of higher-dimensional systems ..... 40
5. Lyapunov functions for Lotka Volterra systems ..... 48
6. Three species linear competion models ..... 60
7. Three species predator-prey systems ..... 75
Example 7.1. Two-prey, one-predator model
Example 7.2. Three species food chain
Example 7.3. Two-predator, one-prey model
Example 7.4. Two infection model
8. Some asymptotic results for our ODE and PDE ..... 102
A List of the Invadability Conditions ..... 109
References ..... 110


#### Abstract

In (1994) Durrett and Levin proposed that the equilibrium behavior of stochastic spatial models could be determined from properties of the solution of the mean field ordinary differential equation (ODE) that is obtained by pretending that all sites are always independent. Here we prove a general result in support of that picture. We give a condition on an ordinary differential equation which implies that densities stay bounded away from 0 in the associated reaction-diffusion equation, and that coexistence occurs in the stochastic spatial model with fast stirring. Then using biologists' notion of invadability as a guide, we show how this condition can be checked in a wide variety of examples that involve two or three species: epidemics, diploid genetics models, predator-prey systems, and various competition models.


Received by the editor July 2, 1999; and in revised form June 23, 2000
Key words and phrases: stochastic spatial models, predator-prey systems, competition models, epidemics, ecology, genetics

AMS Subject Classifications. Primary: 60K35, 92B05. Secondary: 34C60, 35K57

Introduction. In the stochastic spatial models we consider, space is represented by a grid of sites, $\mathbf{Z}^{d}$, the $d$-dimensional integer lattice, each site can be in one of a finite set of states $\mathcal{S}$ and each site changes its state at a rate that depends on its state and the states of a few nearby sites. In the jargon of probability theory these models are interacting particle systems. See Liggett $(1985,1999)$, Durrett $(1995,1999)$. As the reader will soon see, these models which arose from physics, are very useful for studying a variety of systems in ecology and genetics.

The goal of this paper is to develop a methodology for proving coexistence of species in the presence of fast stirring, i.e., when the values at adjacent sites are exchanged at a large rate $\nu$. Here, coexistence means that there is a stationary distribution that concentrates on configurations that have infinitely many sites in each state $s \in S$. The assumption of fast stirring greatly simplifies proofs since, as we will explain in more detail later, systems with stirring at rate $\nu$ on rescaled lattices $\nu^{-1 / 2} \mathbf{Z}^{d}$ in the limit as $\nu \rightarrow \infty$ become deterministic and approximate solutions of partial differential equations.

We will eventually apply our method to to more than ten families of examples. To explain have in mind, we will first consider one example in detail.

Example 1. A Predator-Prey System. The states of the system are $0=$ vacant site, $1=$ fish (prey), $2=$ shark (predator). For simplicity, restrict our attention to two dimensional space. Inspired by Durrett and Levin (2000), we define the system in continuous time as follows.
(a) Fish die at rate $\delta_{1}$. Sharks die at rate $\delta_{2}$.
(b) Fish are born at vacant sites at rate $\beta_{1} f_{1}$, where $f_{1}$ is the fraction of adjacent sites in state 1 .
(c) Each shark get hungry at rate 1 . When hungry it inspects a random number $Q$ of neighboring sites moving outward in a spiral pattern from its current location. To describe the pattern in symbols, let $\|z\|_{\infty}=\max \left\{\left|z_{1}\right|,\left|z_{2}\right|\right\}$. Start at $(1,0)$ and search the eight points with $\|z\|_{\infty}=1$ in counterclockwise order ending at $(1,-1)$. Move to $(2,-1)$ and search the 16 points with $\|z\|_{\infty}=2$, again in counterclockwise order ending at $(2,-2)$. Move to $(3,-2)$, etc. In a picture
the pattern is

(d) The shark stops at the first fish it finds and eats it. A shark that has just eaten gives birth with probability $\beta_{2}$ to a new shark that is placed on the starting square. A shark that finds no fish returns to its starting square. These conventions about shark placement are needed to guarantee there is never more than one shark per site.

Before moving on the the analysis, we will make an assumption that will be the default condition throughout the paper.

Generic Parameters. If no assumptions are stated, then all transition rates referred to in the definition of the model are positive.

In some cases, we will want to set parameters to 0 in order to include some of the examples which were discussed earlier in the literature that had fewer parameters, and we will explicitly say so. In general, we can treat approximations of these by replacing the 0 parameters by a very small positive values.

We will begin our analysis with the special case of the predatorprey model in which $Q=q$ is constant, a case that was considered by Durrett and Levin (2000). The first step in their analysis, and in ours, is to look at the mean field $O D E$ which is obtained by pretending that the states of all sites are always indepedent. In this case the mean field ODE is:

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1}\left(1-u_{1}-u_{2}\right)-\delta_{1} u_{1}-u_{2}\left\{1-\left(1-u_{1}\right)^{q}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{2} u_{2}\left\{1-\left(1-u_{1}\right)^{q}\right\}-\delta_{2} u_{2} \tag{1}
\end{align*}
$$

The first term on the right represents the birth of fish onto vacant sites, the second death of fish. The last term on the second line refers
to death of sharks. To explain the remaining terms, we note that $u_{2}\left\{1-\left(1-u_{1}\right)^{q}\right\}$ gives the fraction of sites occupied by sharks times the probability a given shark will find at least one fish when it inspects $q$ neighbors, so $\beta_{2}$ times this gives the rate at which new sharks are produced.

The generalization to a random $Q$ is straightforward. If we let $g(u)=1-E(1-u)^{Q}$ be the probability a fish is found during the search then the mean field ODE becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1}\left(1-u_{1}-u_{2}\right)-\delta u_{1}-u_{2} g\left(u_{1}\right)  \tag{2}\\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{2} u_{2} g\left(u_{1}\right)-\delta_{2} u_{2}
\end{align*}
$$

The reason for interest in the general form is that by choosing suitable distributions we can generate other functional forms considered in ecology. It is interesting to note that two of the most commonly used examples in ecology come from two of the most commonly used examples in probability.
I. $Q$ has a geometric distribution: $P(Q=n)=p(1-p)^{n-1}$ for $n \geq 1$. In this case

$$
\begin{gathered}
g(u)=1-\sum_{q=1}^{\infty} p(1-p)^{q-1}(1-u)^{q}=1-\frac{p(1-u)}{1-(1-p)(1-u)} \\
=\frac{u}{p+(1-p) u}=\frac{B u}{A+u}
\end{gathered}
$$

where $B=1 /(1-p)$ and $A=p /(1-p)$. This is a Holling Type 2 functional response, see Holling (1959), or Chapter 3 of Hassell (1978).
II. $Q$ has a Poisson distribution: $P(Q=n)=e^{-\lambda} \lambda^{n} / n$ !, for $n \geq 0$. In this case

$$
g(u)=1-\sum_{q=0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda} \frac{\lambda^{n}}{n!}(1-u)^{q}=1-e^{-\lambda} e^{\lambda(1-u)}=1-e^{-\lambda u}
$$

which is the form introduced by Nicholson and Bailey (1935).
The most important feature of the nonlinear terms in I and II is that the per capita birth rate for the predator tends to a positive limit as
the density of prey $u_{1} \rightarrow \infty$, rather than increasing without bound as in the linear case.

To prove coexistence for the linear case $q=1$ of the predator prey model, Durrett (1992) used a Lyapunov function for the mean field ODE, i.e., a function that is decreasing along solutions. However, in order to keep densities from hitting zero this is overkill. One only needs to know that solutions stay away from the boundary. To introduce the relevant generalization of Lyapunov function, consider the ODE

$$
\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}=f_{i}(u)
$$

defined for $u \in \Gamma=\left\{u \in \mathbf{R}^{n}: u_{i} \geq 0, u_{1}+\cdots+u_{n} \leq 1\right\}$, and to have a unique solution suppose that the $f_{i}$ are Lipshitz continuous. A continuous function $\phi: \Gamma \rightarrow[0, \infty]$ is said to be a repelling function for the closed set $G$ in the $O D E$ if
(i) $G=\{u \in \Gamma: \phi(u)=\infty\}$
(ii) for each $\delta>0$ there is a $c_{\delta}>0$ so that

$$
d \phi(u(t)) / d t \leq-c_{\delta} \quad \text { when } \quad M+\delta<\phi<\infty
$$

Note that the constant in (ii) is uniform over $(M+\delta, \infty)$. At first this may seem stronger than
(ii') for each $0<\delta<K<\infty$ there is a $c_{\delta, K}>0$ so that

$$
d \phi(u(t)) / d t \leq-c_{\delta, K} \quad \text { when } \quad M+\delta<\phi<M+K
$$

However, if we consider $\psi(\phi(u))$ where $\psi$ increases rapidly then the conclusion (ii') can be improved to (ii).

It should be clear from (i) and (ii) that we can replace $\phi$ by $\max \{\phi, M\}$ and assume without loss of generality that $\phi \geq M$. With a little undergraduate analysis, see Section 9 , one can show that

Proposition 0. Suppose (i) and (ii) hold. If $\phi(u(0))<\infty$ then

$$
\limsup _{t \rightarrow \infty} \phi\left(u_{i}(t)\right) \leq M
$$

In view of (i) this implies that at large times $u_{i}(t)$ stays bounded away from $G$. Let

$$
\Gamma^{+}=\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{i}>0 \text { for all } i\right\} \quad \text { and } \quad \Gamma^{0}=\Gamma-\Gamma^{+}
$$

be the points in $\Gamma$ where at least one coordinate is equal to 0 . When the conclusion of Proposition 0 holds for $G=\Gamma^{0}$, the ODE is said to be uniformly persistent or permanent. Hofbauer (1988) used repelling functions and a weaker concept called average Lyapunov functions to prove permanence for ODE in general and for Lotka-Volterra systems in particular. See Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) for an account of this method and its application to a number of concrete examples. The reader will see this book cited numerous times in Section 2. We would like to thank Odo Diekmann for bringing Hofbauer's results to our attention.

In order to prove coexistence of species in the stochastic spatial model using the methods of Durrett and Neuhauser (1994), we must prove a persistence results for the corresponding RDE (reaction diffusion equation),

$$
\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}=\Delta u_{i}+f_{i}(u)
$$

where $\Delta=\partial^{2} u / \partial x_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\partial^{2} u / \partial x_{k}^{2}$. To do this, we let $\log ^{-} z=$ $\max \{0,-\log z\}$ be the negative part of $\log z$ and add three more conditions:
(iii) $\phi(u)$ is convex

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { (iv) } \phi(u) \leq C\left(1+\sum_{i=1}^{k} \log ^{-} u_{i}\right) \\
& \text { (v) } f_{i}(u) \geq-\alpha_{i} u_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

A function satisfying (i)-(iv) is said to be a repelling function for $G$ in the reaction diffusion equation $(R D E)$. The last condition, (v), is a technicality concerning the ODE. In most examples, the rate at which the process can leave state $i$ is bounded so (v) holds. Note that we did not assume $f_{i}(u) \leq C_{i} u_{i}$, since this would for example rule out epidemic models where removed individuals arise only from infected individuals.

Proposition 1. Suppose a repelling function exists for the $R D E$, (v) holds, the initial condition $u(0, x) \in \Gamma$ is continuous, and has

$$
u_{i}(0, x) \geq \eta_{i}>0 \quad \text { when } \quad x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{2}
$$

There are constants $\kappa>0$ and $t_{0}<\infty$, which only depend on $\eta_{i}, \delta$, and $\epsilon$ so that

$$
\phi(u(t, x)) \leq M+\epsilon \quad \text { when } \quad|x| \leq \kappa t, \quad t \geq t_{0}
$$

In words $u(t, x)$ stays bounded away from $G$ on a linearly growing set. Proposition 1 is essentially due to Durrett (1992). However, since the proof was given there only for a special case, and we will need its sharper conclusion in our more general setting, we will give a complete proof in Section 8. The proof for the new general result is shorter than the previous one for the special case.

The conclusion of Proposition 1 is most informative when $G=\Gamma^{0}$, in which case it implies that probabilities are bounded away from 0 on a linearly growing set. However we will also use this result several times for smaller $G \subset \partial \Gamma$ (see Examples 2.2, 2.3, and 2.5). The uniformity in Proposition 1 is needed so that we can use the methods of Durrett and Neuhauser (1994) in the form explained in Section 9 of Durrett's (1995) St. Flour notes. If we make the assumption:
( $\star$ ) There are constants $A_{i}<a_{i}<b_{i}<B_{i}, L$, and $T$ so that if $u_{i}(0, x) \in\left(A_{i}, B_{i}\right)$ when $x \in[-L, L]^{d}$ then $u_{i}(T, x) \in\left(a_{i}, b_{i}\right)$ when $x \in[-3 L, 3 L]^{d}$.
then we can state Theorem 9.1 of Durrett (1995) as:

Proposition 2. If ( $\star$ ) holds then there is coexistence for the stochastic spatial model with fast stirring.

Combining Propositions 1 and 2, gives

Proposition 3. If (i)-(v) hold then there is coexistence for the stochastic spatial model with fast stirring.

As the reader can see from the citations, all of this was known in 1995. What is the new here, is the realization that the biologists notion of invadability leads to a systematic procedure for constructing such functions. To explain this type of reasoning, we will apply it to our predator prey model. To begin, we note that if $u_{1}=0$ (no fish) then sharks cannot give birth so $u_{2}(t) \downarrow 0$. On the other hand, if $u_{2}=0$ (no sharks) then

$$
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=\beta_{1} u_{1}\left(1-u_{1}\right)-\delta u_{1}=\beta_{1} u_{1}\left(\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}}-u_{1}\right)
$$

so if $\beta_{1}>\delta_{1}$, and $u_{1}(0)>0$ then $u_{1}(t) \rightarrow\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$.

The last observation implies that if $u_{2}$ is small then $u_{1}$ will equilibrate to a density $\sigma_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$. When the 1's are in equilibrium, the 2 's satisfy

$$
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=u_{2}\left(\beta_{2} g\left(\sigma_{1}\right)-\delta_{2}\right)
$$

and so they will increase if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2} g\left(\sigma_{1}\right)>\delta_{2} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Abstracting from these observations we make the following definitions.

Definition 1. We say that 2's die out, and write $2 \downarrow 0$, if

$$
d u_{2} / d t<0 \quad \text { when } u_{1}=0 \text { and } u_{2}>0
$$

Definition 2. We say that 1's equilibrate at density $\sigma_{1}$, and write $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$, if

$$
u_{1}(t) \rightarrow \sigma_{1} \quad \text { as } t \rightarrow \infty \text { when } u_{2}=0 \text { and } u_{1}(0)>0 .
$$

Definition 3. We say that species 2 can invade species 1 in equilibrium, and write $2 \succ 1$, if as $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma_{1}, 0\right)$ through $\Gamma^{+}$we have

$$
\lim \inf \frac{1}{u_{2}} \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}>0
$$

To help the reader remember the notation, we remark that the TeX name for the symbol we have just defined is $\backslash$ succ which is short for "successor." In words, we could say 2 succeeds 1 , but we will usually read this as 2 invades 1 .

For the sake of symmetry, it is natural to write "technical conditions" $\beta_{1}>\delta_{1}$ for the equilibrium distribution $\sigma_{1}>0$ in invadability language as:

Definition 4. We say that $i \succ 0$ if as $u \rightarrow 0$ inside $\Gamma_{+}$we have

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{u_{i}} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}>0
$$

As the example $d u_{1} / d t=u_{1}^{2}\left(\sigma_{1}-u_{1}\right)$ shows $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$ does not imply $1 \succ 0$. Having introduced these definitions we can state our predatorprey result abstractly as

Theorem 1. If $2 \downarrow 0,1 \succ 0,1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$, and $2 \succ 1$ in the mean field ODE then there is coexistence in the stochastic spatial model with fast stirring.

Proof. See Figure 1. We begin with the edge $\Gamma_{1}^{0}=\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{1}=0\right\}$. A little calculus (see Proposition 1.2) shows that if we suppose (a) $2 \downarrow 0$ and (b) $1 \succ 0$, and positive constants $\lambda_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $\eta_{1}$ are chosen appropriately, then $h_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{2}-\lambda_{1} \log u_{1}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}<0 \quad \text { when } 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{1}(\text { and } u \in \Gamma) \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In words, $h_{1}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. To prepare for the next step of the construction we have to tighten $h_{1}$ so that it is strictly decreasing in a strip near $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. To do this, we first pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \vee M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$, then we take $\bar{\eta}_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$ so that $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$.


Figure 1
Moving to the other edge $\Gamma_{2}^{0}=\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{2}=0\right\}$, we let $\sigma_{1}=$ $\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$ be the equilibrium and $g(u)=u-\sigma_{1} \log u$. Since $g^{\prime}(u)=$ $1-\sigma_{1} / u$ and $g^{\prime \prime}(u)=\sigma_{1} / u^{2}, g(u)$ is convex and has a minimum at $\sigma_{1}$. Since we have assumed $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}, g$ is a convex Lyapunov function for the ODE on $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Let and $\psi_{2}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+2}$. A little more
calculus (see Proposition 1.1) shows that if (a) $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$ and (b) $2 \succ 1$, and positive constants $\theta_{2}, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{2}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{2} \psi_{2}\left(u_{1}\right) u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{2} \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $\epsilon_{2} \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$
and (ii) $d h_{1} / d t \leq B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{1}$.

To see the reason for the form of $\psi_{2}(u)$, note that when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{2}$ then $h_{2}(u)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{2}$. In words $h_{2}$ is a repelling function for $\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{2}=0, u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{2}\right\}$ and does only a bounded amount of damage near the corner $(0,0)$. The region in (ii) is not a problem because of (5). To finish up now, we truncate $h_{2}$, that is, we pick $M_{2}$ large enough so that the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \vee M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. Finally we pick $K \geq 1$ large enough so that $K \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$, and the desired result then follows from Proposition 3.

The details of the proof may seem mysterious now, but as the reader will see through a dozen examples below, all proofs follow the same simple pattern. The construction is arranged so that when each stage is complete we have a repelling function for some set $G \subset \Gamma_{0}$. Here, $\bar{h}_{1}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ and then $K \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$. This proceduce dictates we start with the side $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ where the perturbation result (Proposition 3.2) has no exceptional set, rather that with $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ where the fixed point at $(0,0)$ causes trouble for the perturbation in Proposition 3.1. We then use the good properties of the first function to cancel the trouble with the second one.

One of the advantages of this style of argument is that it uses only qualitative features of the ODE and hence generalizes easily to other systems. For example from our analysis of the predator prey system, we can immediately get a result for

Example 2. Epidemic models. Following Mollison (1972), (1977) we formulate a continuous time model on an infinite grid with three states, $0=$ susceptible, $1=$ infected, and $2=$ removed. The word "removed" will mean dead in the case of a fatal disease like rabies, or in the case of measles, that the individual has had the disease once and is immune to having it again.

Letting $f_{i}$ be the fraction of neighbors in state $i$, we can write down the transition rates for our model as follows.

$$
1 \rightarrow 2 \quad \beta_{2} f_{2} \quad 2 \rightarrow 0 \quad \delta_{2} \quad 0 \rightarrow 1 \quad \beta_{0}+\beta_{1} f_{1}
$$

In words, susceptibles become infected a rate proportional to the number of infected neighbors. Infecteds die after an exponential amount of time with mean $1 / \delta_{2}$, leaving an empty space which is colonized by nearby occupied sites at rate $\beta_{1} f_{1}$ or filled by an immigrant from outside the system at rate $\beta_{0}$.

The mean field differential equations in this case are simple:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=u_{0}\left(\beta_{0}+\beta_{1} u_{1}\right)-\beta_{2} u_{1} u_{2} \\
& \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=\beta_{2} u_{1} u_{2}-\delta_{2} u_{2} \tag{7}
\end{align*}
$$

From the equations and Definitions $1-4$, it is easy to see that If $\delta_{2}>0$ then $2 \downarrow 0$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { If } \beta_{0}+\beta_{1}>0 \text { then } 1 \succ 0 \text { and } 1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1} \text { where } \sigma_{1}=1 \text {. } \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\beta_{2}>\delta_{2}$ then $2 \succ 1$.
Combining the last three conditions we have:
Theorem 2. If $\delta_{2}>0, \beta_{0}+\beta_{1}>0$, and $\beta_{2}>\delta_{2}$ then there is coexistence for the epidemic with fast stirring.

Proof. The conditions imply $2 \downarrow 0,1 \succ 0,1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}=1$, and $2 \succ 1$ so the result follows from Theorem 1.

For the nearest neighbor model with no stirring and spontaneous regrowth (i.e., $\beta_{0}>0, \beta_{1}=0$ ) Durrett and Neuhauser (1991) showed in two dimensions that if the epidemic without regrowth (i.e., $\beta_{0}+$ $\beta_{1}=0$ ) is supercritical, then the system with spontaneous regrowth has a nontrivial stationary distribution. By using results of Zhang (1990) instead of those in Cox and Durrett (1988) one should be able to extend Durrett and Neuhauser's result to finite range models with no stirring and spontaneous regrowth in dimensions $d \geq 2$.

The result given in Theorem 2 is the first that we know of for epidemic models with contact regrowth ( $\beta_{0}=0, \beta_{1}>0$.) For more
on spatial epidemic models, see Mollison and Kuulasmaa (1985), Bak, Chen, and Tang (1990), Drossel and Schwabl (1992), Henley (1993), Durrett (1995b), Durrett and Levin (1996), Holmes (1997) or the conference proceedings edited by Mollison (1995), and by Grenfell and Dobson (1995). Closely related to epidemic models are hostpathogen systems. See Rand, Keeling, and Wilson (1995), and Thrall and Burton (1997) for spatial models in this context.

Overview of the rest of the paper. In Section 1 we will prove Propostions 1.1 and 1.2 which we have used in the proof of Theorem 1. In Section 2 we will state our results for the five two-species examples we will consider. In a few cases we emerge with something less than a repelling function (e.g., we can conclude only that $u_{1}+u_{2}$ stays bounded away from 0 on a linearly growing set) so to complete the proof we need an auxillary argument to conclude that the individual $u_{i}$ stay bounded away from 0 in the RDE. This is done in Section 3 with the help of the Feynman-Kac formula.

In Section 4, we prove perturbation results for three dimensional systems that generalize those for the two dimensional case given in Section 1. In Section 5, we introduce the raw material that feeds into the machinery of the Section 4: Lyapunov functions for the two dimensional boundary systems, which we assume to be of the Lotka-Volterra form. In Section 6 and 7, we combine the results from Sections 4 and 5 to prove coexistence results for linear competition models and for three species predator-prey systems. Section 8 ties up loose ends giving the proofs of Propositions 0 and 1 , and Theorem 6.3

Acknowledgements. The research reported on here was partially supported by grants through the program in Statistics and Probability at the National Science Foundation. The author would like to express his appreciation to Janet Best and to an anonymous referee for their comments which have led to many improvements in the paper.

1. Perturbation of one-dimensional systems. In this section we will prove Propositions 1.1 and 1.2 that were used in the proof of Theorem 1. More generally, we will prove a result that allows us to extend a Lyapunov function defined on a one-dimensional face $F_{1}=\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{2}=0, \ldots u_{n}=0\right\}$ to be a repelling function in a neighborhood of that face (in $\Gamma$ ). The reader should feel free to just read the statements of Propositions 1.1 and 1.2 (along with the relevant definitions) before moving on to the examples.

We reduce the number of perturbation variables from $n-1$ to 1 by looking at a positive linear combination of the last $n-1$ coordinates. Let

$$
z=\sum_{k=2}^{n} \omega_{k} u_{k} \quad \text { where each of the } \omega_{k}>0
$$

let $\|\omega\|=\sup _{2 \leq k \leq n} \omega_{k}$, and note that $z \leq\|\omega\|$ for all $u \in \Gamma$. In the other direction to extend vectors from 1 to $n$ dimensions let $0_{n-1} \in \mathbf{R}^{n-1}$ be a vector of all 0 's, and for real numbers $x$ we define $\left(x, 0_{n-1}\right) \in \mathbf{R}^{n}$ to be the vector with $x$ in the first coordinate and then all 0 's.

Proposition 1.1. Let $\sigma>0$ and $g(u)=u-\sigma \log u$. Suppose
(a) $\sigma$ is an attracting fixed point on $F_{1}^{+}=\left\{u \in F_{1}: u_{1}>0\right\}$
(b) If $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma, 0_{n-1}\right)$ from inside $\Gamma^{+}$, then $\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 3 \alpha_{0}>0$.
(c) $d z / d t \geq-C_{c} z$ and $d u_{1} / d t \geq-C_{c} u_{1}$

Let $0<\epsilon<\sigma /(1+\|\omega\|)$ and let $\psi(u)=(\epsilon-u)^{+2}$, i.e., the square of the positive part of $\epsilon-u$. If positive constants $\theta, \lambda, \eta, \nu$, and $B$ are chosen appropriately with $\theta \leq 1$ and $\eta \leq \epsilon$ then

$$
h(u)=g\left(u_{1}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) z\right)-\lambda \log z
$$

satisfies: (i) $d h / d t \leq-\nu<0$ when $\epsilon \leq u_{1}$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
and (ii) $d h / d t \leq B$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
Remark. The conditions in (c) are implied by (v). The first condition is what we have called $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$ in the introduction. The second is more general than $2 \succ 1$ so we need a new definition.

Definition 5. We say that $2, \ldots n$ can invade 1 and write $2, \ldots n \succ 1$ if (b) holds.

Proof of Proposition 1.1. Calculus tells us that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) z\right)\left(\left\{1+\theta \psi^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) z\right\} \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d z}{d t}\right)-\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We begin by checking (ii) since it is only a few lines. Differentiating we find

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{\prime}(u)=1-\frac{\sigma}{u} \quad \text { so } \quad\left|g^{\prime}(u)\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u} \quad \text { for } 0<u \leq 1 \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

When $u_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $\theta \leq 1, g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) z\right)<0$, so using (1.2) and assumption (c) with the trivial bounds that hold for $0 \leq u \leq 1$ : $\psi(u) \leq 1, \psi^{\prime}(u) \leq 2 \epsilon:$

$$
\begin{align*}
g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right. & \left.+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) z\right)\left(\left\{1+\theta \psi^{\prime}(u) z\right\} \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d z}{d t}\right) \\
& \leq\left(\frac{C_{d}}{u_{1}+\theta \psi\left(u_{1}\right) z}\right) \cdot C_{c}\left\{(1+2 \epsilon\|\omega\|) u_{1}+\theta z\right\} \leq C_{e} \tag{1.3}
\end{align*}
$$

for some $C_{e}<\infty$. Using (c) again we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\lambda \frac{d z}{d t} \leq \lambda C_{c} z \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (1.1), (1.3) and (1.4) proves (ii) with $B=C_{e}+\lambda C_{c}$.
Proof of (i). To begin, we note that (b) implies we can pick $\eta_{1}<\sigma / 2$ so that if $\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \leq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{1}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 2 \alpha_{0} \lambda>0 \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Our first goal is the control the derivative $d h / d t$ away from the fixed point.

Lemma 1.1. Given $\epsilon$ and $\eta_{1}$, there are $\alpha_{1}, \eta_{2}, \lambda_{0}>0$ so that if $\lambda \leq \lambda_{0}$ then

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq-\alpha_{1}<0
$$

when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon,\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.

Proof of Lemma 1.1. When $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$, we have $\psi(u)=0$, so $h(u)=$ $g\left(u_{1}\right)-\lambda \log z$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}-\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Property (a), implies that there is a constant $\alpha_{1}>0$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\left(u_{1}, 0_{n-1}\right) \leq-3 \alpha_{1} \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \geq \eta_{1}$. Using the boundedness of $g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right)$ for $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$ which comes from (1.2), and the continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$ it follows that if $\eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}(u) \leq-2 \alpha_{1} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon,\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$. To bound the second term in (1.6), we use (1.4). Combining this with (1.8), it follows that

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq-2 \alpha_{1}+C_{c} \lambda_{0} \leq-\alpha_{1}
$$

if $\eta_{2}$ and $\lambda_{0}$ are chosen small enough.
To complete the proof of (i) in Proposition 1.1, we have to consider the region near the fixed point. To do this, we will prove

Lemma 1.2. Given $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$, if $\eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$ is chosen small enough

$$
\sup \left\{\frac{d h}{d t}:\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \leq \eta_{1}, 0<z \leq \eta_{3}\right\} \leq-\lambda \alpha_{0}
$$

Proof of Lemma 1.2. Again we use (1.6). By (a), the first term has

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}\left(u_{1}, 0_{n-1}\right) \leq 0 \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $0<u_{1} \leq 1$. Using the boundedness of $g^{\prime}$ near the fixed point (which follows from (1.2)) and the continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$, it follows that if $\eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\begin{equation*}
g^{\prime}\left(u_{1}\right) \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}(u) \leq \lambda \alpha_{0} \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \leq \eta_{1}$ and $z \leq \eta_{3}$. Combining (1.10) with (1.6), and (1.5), we have

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq \lambda \alpha_{0}-2 \lambda \alpha_{0}<0
$$

when $\left|u_{1}-\sigma\right| \leq \eta_{1}, 0<z \leq \eta_{3}$. From this the desired result follows.

In Proposition 1.1 we considered the case of a fixed point $\sigma_{1}>0$. The next case covers the case in which the fixed point on the edge is at 0 . The new result is an improvement over Proposition 1.1 in that there is no need to exclude small values of $u_{1}$, so the conclusion holds all the way along the edge. Here, again $z=\omega_{2} u_{2}+\cdots+\omega_{n} u_{n}$ with $\omega_{k}>0$ for $2 \leq k \leq n$.

Proposition 1.2. Suppose that (a) 0 is an attracting fixed point on the edge $F_{1}$, i.e., $d u_{1} / d t<0$ when $u_{1}>0, u_{2}=0, \ldots u_{n}=0$
(b) If $u \rightarrow 0_{n}$ from inside $\Gamma_{+}$, then $\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 3 \alpha_{0}>0$.
(c) $d z / d t \geq-C_{c} z$.

If positive constants $\lambda, \nu$ and $\eta$ are chosen appropriately then $h(u)=$ $u_{1}-\lambda \log z$ has $d h / d t \leq-\nu<0$ for $0 \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.

Proof. Calculus tells us

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}-\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \tag{1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a special case of (1.6). It follows from (b) that if we pick $\eta_{1}$ small then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{z} \cdot \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 2 \alpha_{0} \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<u_{1}, z \leq \eta_{1}$. Continuity of the right-hand side of the ODE allows us to extend the result to the points with $u_{1}=0,0<z \leq \eta_{1}$. Continuity also implies that if $0 \leq u_{1}, z \leq \eta_{2}$ and $\eta_{2}$ is small

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} \leq \lambda_{0} \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (1.11)-(1.13), we have shown that

$$
d h / d t \leq-\lambda \alpha_{0} \quad \text { when } 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2} \text { and } 0 \leq z \leq \eta_{2}
$$

To complete the proof, we need an upper bound on $d h / d t$ when $\eta_{2} \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0 \leq z \leq \eta_{3}$ for some $0<\eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. To begin, note that (a) and continuity of the right-hand side of the ODE imply that there is are $\eta_{3}, \alpha_{1}>0$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} \leq-2 \alpha_{1}<0 \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\eta_{2} \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0<z \leq \eta_{3}$. Using (1.11) and the inequality in (c), gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}-\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \leq-2 \alpha_{1}+\lambda C_{c} \leq-\alpha_{1} \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

if $\lambda$ is small, and the proof of the lemma is complete.
2. Two-Species Examples. In this section we will describe our coexistence results for our two-species examples. By Proposition 3 it is enough to check (i)-(v). All of our processes have bounded rates and hence satisfy ( v ), so it is sufficient to prove the existence of a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$. We begin with a fairly general competition model.

Example 2.1. Linear competition with exclusion. In this model each site can be in state 0,1 , or 2 , where 0 is vacant while $i=$ 1,2 indicate sites occupied by types 1 or 2 respectively. The word "exclusion" here refers to the fact that the two types cannot occupy the same site at the same time. To formulate the dynamics of this and of many of our other models we will let $p_{i}(z)$ be a probability distribution on $\mathbf{Z}^{d}$ that represents the interaction kernel for species $i$, and let

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{i}=\sum_{y} p_{i}(y-x) 1_{\left\{\xi_{t}(y)=i\right\}} \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the "fraction of neighbors in state $i$." For simplicity we will suppose that $\left\{z: p_{i}(z)>0\right\}$ is finite and $p_{i}(z)=p_{i}(-z)$. It is a strength (and weakness) of our approach that it does not depend on the interaction kernels $p_{i}$. Indeed, one could even use different kernels for each of the local densities $f_{i}$ in the table below.

Writing $i \rightarrow j$ for state $i$ changes to $j$, we can now describe the jump rates for the model as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{12} f_{2} \\
0 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{21} f_{1} \\
1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1}+\gamma_{11} f_{1}+\gamma_{12} f_{2} & & \\
2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2}+\gamma_{21} f_{1}+\gamma_{22} f_{2} & &
\end{array}
$$

In words, individuals of type $i$ 's give birth at rate $\beta_{i}$ onto vacant sites, at rate $\beta_{i, 3-i}$ onto sites of the opposite type, and die at a rate that is a linear function of the number of 1's and 2's in their neighborhood.

This model contains as a special case several others in the literature. In the category of processes that cannot give birth onto occupied sites, i.e., $\beta_{12}=\beta_{21}=0$, Neuhauser (1992) studied the situation in which all $\gamma_{i j}=0$, while Durrett and Levin (1997) used a model with $\gamma_{21}>0$ and all of the other $\gamma_{i j}=0$ in their study of allelopathy. To describe the second system in words, species 1 is a type of $E$. coli that produces colicin, a chemical that increases the death rate of species
2. More recently Neuhauser and Pacala (1999) have considered this model with general competition coefficients to study the effect of local competitive interactions between species on the outcome of competition.

If we set $\beta_{12}=\beta_{2}, \beta_{21}=0$, and all the $\gamma_{i j}=0$ then we get a process studied by Crawley and May (1987), Durrett and Swindle (1991), Durrett and Schinazi (1993), and in an $n$-species form by Tilman (1994). In Tilman's generalization type $i$ is allowed to give birth onto sites occupied by types $j<i$. Silvertown et al. (1992) and Durrett and Levin (1998) generalized Tilman's strictly hierarchical model by setting $\beta_{i j}=\beta_{i} c_{i j}$. In words, species $i$ gives birth at rate $\beta_{i}$ and successfully displaces $j$ with probability $c_{i j}$.

If we let $u_{i}$ denote the fraction of sites in state $i$ then the mean field ODE for the linear competition with exclusion can be written as:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-u_{1}\left(\delta_{1}+\gamma_{11} u_{1}+\gamma_{12} u_{2}\right)-\beta_{12} u_{1} u_{2}+\beta_{21} u_{1} u_{2} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{0}-u_{2}\left(\delta_{2}+\gamma_{21} u_{1}+\gamma_{22} u_{2}\right)-\beta_{21} u_{1} u_{2}+\beta_{12} u_{1} u_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The first term in the first equation comes from sites changing from 0 to 1 at rate $\beta_{1} f_{1}$, which if we assume adjacent sites are independent, results in new 1's being produced at rate $u_{0} \cdot \beta_{1} u_{1}$. The second term comes from the death mechanism in a similar way. The third and fourth terms arise from 1's turning into 2's and from 2's turning into 1's, respectively.

To begin to analyze the mean field ODE, we let $u_{0}=1-u_{1}-u_{2}$ and rearrange to get

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=u_{1}\left\{\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{11}\right) u_{1}\right. \\
&\left.\quad-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{12}+\beta_{12}-\beta_{21}\right) u_{2}\right\} \\
& \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=u_{2}\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{22}\right) u_{2}\right.  \tag{2.1.2}\\
&\left.\quad-\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{21}+\beta_{21}-\beta_{12}\right) u_{1}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

This differential equation has the Lotka-Volterra form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}=u_{i}\left(r_{i}-\sum_{j} a_{i j} u_{j}\right) \tag{2.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

In ecological terms, $r_{i}$ is the intrinsic growth rate of species $i, a_{i i}$ measures intraspecific competition for species $i$, and when $j \neq i, a_{i j}$ measures interspecific competition between species $i$ and $j$.

In the case of two species, one can easily solve for the coordinates of the only possible equilibrium state ( $\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}$ ) with both components non-zero:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{1}=\frac{a_{22} r_{1}-a_{12} r_{2}}{a_{22} a_{11}-a_{12} a_{21}} \quad \rho_{2}=\frac{a_{11} r_{2}-a_{21} r_{1}}{a_{22} a_{11}-a_{12} a_{21}} \tag{2.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging in the values for $r_{i}$ and $a_{i j}$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \rho_{1}=\frac{\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{22}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{12}+\beta_{12}-\beta_{21}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)}{D}  \tag{2.1.5}\\
& \rho_{2}=\frac{\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{11}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{21}+\beta_{21}-\beta_{12}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)}{D}
\end{align*}
$$

where $D=\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{11}\right)\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{22}\right)-\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{21}+\beta_{21}-\beta_{12}\right)\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{12}+\right.$ $\left.\beta_{12}-\beta_{21}\right)$.

With the brute force approach of solving the equations for the equilibrium distribution, it is hard to understand what the conditions $\rho_{i}>0$ mean, or what is more important, how to use them in a proof. As we will now show the condition becomes transparent and useful for proofs if we approach the question from the viewpoint of mutual invadability. To show the generality of the calculation, and to have simpler notation, we will carry it out for the Lotka-Volterra system in (2.1.3) assuming only that all of the constants $r_{i}$ and $a_{i j}$ are positive.

The first step is to note that if $r_{i}>0$ then species $i$ in the absence of the other, will have equilibrium densities given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{i}=r_{i} / a_{i i} \tag{2.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using Definitions 2 and 4 from the introduction we can say that if $r_{i}>0$ then $1 \succ 0$ and $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$. From equation (2.1.3) and Definition 3 , it is easy to see that

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
1 \succ 2 & \text { if } & r_{1}-a_{12} \sigma_{2}>0 \\
2 \succ 1 & \text { if } & r_{2}-a_{21} \sigma_{1}>0 \tag{2.1.7}
\end{array}
$$

In the concrete situation of Example 2.1,

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{i}=\beta_{i}-\delta_{i} \quad \sigma_{i}=\frac{\beta_{i}-\delta_{i}}{\beta_{i}+\gamma_{i i}} \tag{2.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

so recalling the definition of the $a_{i j}$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& 1 \succ 2 \quad \text { if } \quad \beta_{1}-\delta_{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{12}+\beta_{12}-\beta_{21}\right) \frac{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}+\gamma_{22}}>0  \tag{2.1.9}\\
& 2 \succ 1 \quad \text { if } \quad \beta_{2}-\delta_{2}-\left(\beta_{2}+\gamma_{21}+\beta_{21}-\beta_{12}\right) \frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}+\gamma_{11}}>0
\end{align*}
$$

To make the connection between the last two conditions and the existence of an interior fixed point, note that (2.1.9) clearly implies that the numerators of the $\rho_{i}$ given in (2.1.5) are positive. To see that the denominator $D$ will also be positive, note that the two conditions in (2.1.9) imply

$$
\frac{\beta_{1}+\gamma_{12}+\beta_{12}-\beta_{21}}{\beta_{2}+\gamma_{22}}<\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}}<\frac{\beta_{1}+\gamma_{11}}{\beta_{2}+\gamma_{21}+\beta_{21}-\beta_{12}}
$$

Combining the calculations above, we expect coexistence in a Lotka-Volterra system if $r_{1}>0, r_{2}>0, r_{2}-a_{21} \sigma_{1}>0$, and $r_{1}-$ $a_{12} \sigma_{2}>0$. The next result confirms this.

Theorem 2.1. Suppose that (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0$; (b) $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}, 2 \succ 1$; and (c) $2 \rightarrow \sigma_{2}$ and $1 \succ 2$ in the mean field ODE. Then there is coexistence in the stochastic spatial model with fast stirring.

Proof of Theorem 2.1. For a picture see Figure 2.1. The three sets of assumptions correspond to the three steps in the proof. We start at the corner and work our way out. Since we have assumed $1 \succ 0$ and $2 \succ 0$, we can pick $\alpha, \eta_{0}>0$ so that if $u_{1}+u_{2}<3 \eta_{0}$ then

$$
\frac{d\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right)}{d t} \geq \alpha\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right)
$$

Letting $h_{0}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\log ^{-}\left(\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right) / 3 \eta_{0}\right)$ and using calculus we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h_{0}}{d t}=\frac{-1}{u_{1}+u_{2}} \cdot \frac{d\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right)}{d t} \leq-\alpha \quad \text { when } u_{1}+u_{2}<3 \eta_{0} \tag{2.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 2.1.
Edge $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Let $\sigma_{i}=\left(\beta_{i}-\delta_{i}\right) /\left(\beta_{i}+\gamma_{i i}\right)$ be the equilibrium density of type $i$ in the absence of its competitor, and let $g_{i}(u)=u-\sigma_{i} \log u$. $\sigma_{i}$ is an attracting point for $u$ with $u_{i}>0$ and $u_{j}=0, j \neq i$ so (a) of Proposition 1.1 is satisfied. The invadability condition $2 \succ 1$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1 now, with $\epsilon_{1} \leq \eta_{0}$, it follows that if $\theta_{1}, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}, \nu_{1}$ and $B_{1}$ are chosen appropriately, and $\psi_{1}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{1}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{1} \psi_{1}\left(u_{1}\right) u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log u_{2} \tag{2.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}<0$ when $\epsilon_{1} \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{1}$ and (ii) $d h_{1} / d t \leq B_{1}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \vee M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2}<\eta_{1}$.

Edge $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. Interchanging the roles of the axes and applying Proposition 1.1 now, with $\epsilon_{2} \leq \eta_{1}$, it follows that if $\theta_{2}, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}, \nu_{2}$ and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately, and $\psi_{2}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{2}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=g_{2}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{2} \psi_{2}\left(u_{2}\right) u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{1} \tag{2.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

with (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $\epsilon_{2} \leq u_{2} \leq 1$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. Again if we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \vee M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1}<\eta_{2}$. In each case (ii) is not a problem because of (2.1.10). Adding our three functions, we see that if $K \geq 1$ is chosen large enough then $K \bar{h}_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$, completing the proof of Theorem 2.1.

In Example 2.1 there is a positive fixed point on each boundary edge. In Examples 1 and 2 in the introduction, there is a positive fixed point on $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ but not on $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Somewhat surprisingly two species can coexist when there is no positive fixed point on either boundary segment $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$.

Example 2.2. Two stage contact process. Following Krone (1999) we consider a variation of the contact process in which individuals have two life stages, $1=$ young and $2=$ adult. In keeping with this interpretation, we declare that only adults can give birth and each new offspring is young. Taking $0=$ vacant and letting $f_{i}$ be the fraction of neighbors in state $i$ we can write the transition rates for our model as follows.

$$
0 \rightarrow 1 \quad \beta f_{2} \quad 1 \rightarrow 2 \quad \gamma \quad i \rightarrow 0 \quad \delta_{i}
$$

Recall that under our generic paremeters assumption, we are assuming that all four parameters $\beta, \gamma, \delta_{1}, \delta_{2}>0$.

In this case the mean field differential equation is

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =-\left(\gamma+\delta_{1}\right) u_{1}+\beta u_{2}\left(1-u_{1}-u_{2}\right)  \tag{2.2.1}\\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\gamma u_{1}-\delta_{2} u_{2}
\end{align*}
$$

From the ODE it is clear that $d u_{2} / d t>0$ when $u_{1}>\left(\delta_{2} / \gamma\right) u_{2}$, while $d u_{1} / d t>0$ when

$$
u_{1}<c\left(u_{2}\right) u_{2} \quad \text { where } \quad c\left(u_{2}\right)=\frac{\beta\left(1-u_{2}\right)}{\gamma+\delta_{1}+\beta u_{2}}
$$

The coefficient $c\left(u_{2}\right)$ decreases as $u_{2}$ increases, so drawing a picture (Figure 2.2) we see that there will be an intersection (and hence a nontrivial fixed point) if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
c(0)=\frac{\beta}{\gamma+\delta_{1}}>\frac{\delta_{2}}{\gamma} \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Near the equilibrium $(0,0)$ we can ignore $\beta u_{2}\left(-u_{1}-u_{2}\right)$ so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} \approx-\left(\gamma+\delta_{1}\right) u_{1}+\beta u_{2} \quad \frac{d u_{2}}{d t} \approx \gamma u_{1}-\delta_{2} u_{2} \tag{2.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

so $d\left(a u_{1}+u_{2}\right) / d t \approx\left(\gamma-a\left(\gamma+\delta_{1}\right)\right) u_{1}+\left(a \beta-\delta_{2}\right) u_{2}$. Both coefficients will be positive if we choose

$$
\frac{\delta_{2}}{\beta}<a<\frac{\gamma}{\gamma+\delta_{1}}
$$

This is possible if (2.2.2) holds. A little calculus shows that if

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{0}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\log ^{-}\left(\left(a u_{1}+u_{2}\right) / \eta\right) \tag{2.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

$a u_{1}+u_{2}<\eta$ then

$$
\frac{d h_{0}}{d t}=\frac{-1}{a u_{1}+u_{2}}\left(a \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}+\frac{d u_{2}}{d t}\right) \leq-\alpha_{0}<0
$$

if $\eta$ is small enough. In words $h_{0}$ is a repelling function for ( 0,0 ).


Figure 2.2.
Theorem 2.2. If (2.2.2) holds then there is coexistence in the two stage contact process with fast stirring.

Proof of Theorem 2.2. Applying Proposition 1 to $\phi=h_{0}$ shows that if $u(0, x) \in \Gamma$ is continuous, and has $u_{i}(0, x) \geq \eta_{i}>0$ when $x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{2}$, there are constants $\kappa>0, \gamma>0$, and $t_{0}<\infty$, which only depend on $\eta_{i}$ and $\delta$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a u_{1}(t, x)+u_{2}(t, x) \geq \gamma>0 \quad \text { when }|x| \leq \kappa t \text { and } t \geq t_{0} \tag{2.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the dynamics of the model, it is not hard to improve the last conclusion to: there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i} \quad \text { when }|x| \leq \kappa(t-3)-1 \text { and } t \geq t_{0}+3 \tag{2.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Once (2.2.6) is established, the result follows from Proposition 2. Examples 2.3 and 2.5 will require similar patches, so we delay the proof of (2.2.6) to Section 3, where it will be Lemma 3.1.

In the previous example we wanted $\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)$ to avoid ( 0,0 ). In the next we have two points $(1,0)$ and $(0,1)$ to stay away from.

Example 2.3. Diploid genetics. Our next model is a slight generalization of one in Cox and Durrett (1995) and Durrett, Buttel, and Harrison (1999). It is a spatial version of the Moran model for diploid individuals with one locus having two alleles that are under selection. Each site can have state $A A, A a$, or $a a$. To formulate the dynamics, we let $\mu_{A A}, \mu_{A a}, \mu_{a a} \in[0,1]$ be the relative fitnesses of the three genotypes. At times of a rate 1 Poisson process, the individual at $x$ is subject to replacement by a new individual. To make the proposed new individual, we choose two parents $y_{1} \neq y_{2}$ according to a joint distribution $q\left(y_{1}-x, y_{2}-x\right)$. Then one letter is selected at random from each parent to produce the proposed new type $i j$. With probability $\mu_{i j}$, the new individual is accepted and replaces the one currently at $x$. With probability $1-\mu_{i j}$, the new individual is rejected and no change occurs.

To calculate the mean-field ODE, we observe that if all sites are independent and are type $i j$ with probability $u_{i j}$ then the probability of picking an $A$ allele is $v_{A}=u_{A A}+u_{A a} / 2$ and the probability of picking an $a$ allele is $v_{a}=1-v_{A}$, so the rate at which new individuals are born is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \beta_{A A}(u)=\mu_{A A} \cdot v_{A}^{2}=\mu_{A A} \cdot\left(u_{A A}+u_{A a} / 2\right)^{2} \\
& \beta_{A a}(u)=\mu_{A a} \cdot 2 v_{A} v_{a}=\mu_{A a} \cdot 2\left(u_{A A}+u_{A a} / 2\right)\left(u_{a a}+u_{A a} / 2\right) \\
& \beta_{a a}(u)=\mu_{a a} \cdot v_{a}^{2}=\mu_{a a} \cdot\left(u_{a a}+u_{A a} / 2\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The total rate at which replacements occur is $\delta(u)=\beta_{A A}(u)+$ $\beta_{A a}(u)+\beta_{a a}(u)$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{i j}}{d t}=\beta_{i j}(u)-\delta(u) u_{i j} \quad \text { for } i j=A A, A a, a a \tag{2.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $u_{A A}+u_{A a}+u_{a a}=1$, we can reduce to two variables, which for maximum symmetry we choose to be $u_{1}=u_{A A}$ and $u_{2}=$ $u_{a a}$. In contrast to previous examples, we don't have to worry about the equilibrium point $u_{1}=0, u_{2}=0$, since a population consisting entirely of $A a$ 's immediately starts to generate $A A$ 's and $a a$ 's. Thus our main concern is to keep the ODE away from the all $A$ state ( 1,0 ) and the all $a$ state ( 0,1 ). To do this we will generalize the approach in the previous example and use two corner functions. To study the ODE near $(1,0)$ we begin by noting that when $\left(u_{A A}, u_{a a}\right)$ is near $(1,0)$, $v_{A A} \approx 1$ and $v_{a}$ is small, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\beta_{A A}(u) & \approx \mu_{A A} \cdot 1 \\
\beta_{A a}(u) & \approx \mu_{A a} \cdot 2 v_{a}  \tag{2.3.2}\\
\beta_{a a}(u) & \approx \mu_{a a} \cdot v_{a}^{2} \approx 0
\end{align*}
$$

and hence $\delta(u) \approx \mu_{A A}$. Using this with (2.3.2) we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d v_{a}}{d t} & =\frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{d u_{A a}}{d t}+\frac{d u_{a a}}{d t}=\frac{1}{2} \cdot \beta_{A a}(u)+\beta_{a a}(u)-\delta(u) v_{a} \\
& \approx \frac{1}{2} \cdot \mu_{A a} \cdot 2 v_{a}-\mu_{A A} v_{a}
\end{aligned}
$$

so $a$ 's can invade the all $A A$ state if $\mu_{A a}>\mu_{A A}$. By symmetry $A$ 's can invade $a a$ if $\mu_{A a}>\mu_{a a}$. Combining the last two inequalities we see that coexistence should occur when heterozygotes have an advantage:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{A a}>\mu_{a a}, \mu_{A A} \tag{2.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 2.3. If (2.3.3) holds then there is coexistence in the diploid genetics model with fast stirring.

Proof. It follows from our calculations that if (2.3.3) holds and $\eta$ is small and

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{0}\left(u_{A A}, u_{a a}\right)=\log ^{-}\left(v_{a} / \eta\right)+\log ^{-}\left(v_{A} / \eta\right) \tag{2.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $h_{0}$ is repelling function for $\{(1,0),(0,1)\}$. Writing $u_{1}=u_{A A}$, $u_{2}=u_{a a}$ and applying Proposition 1 to $\phi=h_{0}$ shows that if $u(0, x) \in$ $\Gamma$ is continuous, and has $u_{i}(0, x) \geq \eta_{i}>0$ when $x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{2}$, there are constants $\kappa>0, \gamma_{i}>0$, and $t_{0}<\infty$, which only depend on $\eta_{i}$ and $\delta$, so that if $u_{0}=1-u_{1}-u_{2}=u_{A a}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x)+u_{0}(t, x) / 2 \geq \gamma_{i}>0 \quad \text { when }|x| \leq \kappa t \text { and } t \geq t_{0} \tag{2.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the dynamics of the model, it is not hard to improve the last conclusion to: there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i} \quad \text { when }|x| \leq \kappa(t-3)-1 \text { and } t \geq t_{0}+3 \tag{2.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Once (2.3.6) is established, which will be done in Lemma 3.2, the result follows from Proposition 2.

Example 2.4. One-dimensional systems. Cox and Schinazi (1998) examined a special case of the diploid genetics model in which $\mu_{a a}=0$. Their motivation came from sickle cell anemia where $a a$ 's have sickle cell anemia but $A a^{\prime}$ s have no disease and increased immunity to malaria (see Haldane 1949). They used a slightly different reproduction scheme, which I call

Good News/Bad News Mating. At times of a rate 1 Poisson process the individual gets the good news that he has been chosen to mate with a randomly chosen neighbor, but also the bad news that if the offspring is viable it will replace him.

Introducing states $0=A A$ and $1=A a$, setting relative fitnesses $\mu_{A a}=1, \mu_{a a}=\kappa<1$, and introducing a fudge factor $q$ that we will explain in a minute, we can write jump rates as:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \text { at rate } & f_{1} / 2 \\
1 \rightarrow 0 & \text { at rate } & \kappa\left(f_{0} / 2+q f_{1}\right)
\end{array}
$$

To explain the rates, note that when 0 picks a neighbor, it will pick a 1 with probability $f_{1}$ and in this case will only make a new 1 with probability $1 / 2$. Since $A a$ has higher fitness the new 1 is always accepted. In the second situation, we have generalized the genetics to allow the mating of two 1 's to produce a 0 with probability $q$. Due to selection the 0 will only be accepted with probability $\kappa$. Our motivation for this is that in some situations (e.g., $t$-haplotypes in
mice) the distribution of genotypes produced is far from a random combination.

A second reason for introducing $q$ is that it allowed Cox and Schinazi (1998) to prove that for any $\kappa<1$ there is a $q_{c}$ so that if $q<q_{c}$ then the 1's survive. To convert our model into the one given in Cox and Schinazi (1998), multiply the rates above by $\lambda=1 / \kappa$, and set $q=p \lambda$. An alternative approach to proving persistence is to introduce fast stirring. The mean field ODE for the density of 1's is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=u_{0} u_{1} / 2-\kappa u_{1}\left(u_{0} / 2+q u_{1}\right) \tag{2.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using $u_{0}=1-u_{1}$ and rearranging we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=\frac{u_{1}}{2}\left\{\left(1-u_{1}\right)(1-\kappa)-2 q \kappa u_{1}\right\}=\frac{\beta u_{1}}{2}\left(\sigma_{1}-u_{1}\right) \tag{2.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\beta=[(1-\kappa)+2 q \kappa]$ and $\sigma=(1-\kappa) / \beta$. From this it follows easily that we have

Theorem 2.4. If $\kappa<1$ and $0<q<\infty$ there is coexistence in the Cox-Schinazi model with fast stirring.

Proof. $g\left(u_{1}\right)=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}$ is a repelling function for $\{0\}$ and (v) holds, so the result follows from Proposition 3.

Of course this reasoning applies in general to one species systems in which the mean field ODE has an attractive positive fixed point. For example we could consider the one species linear competition model (a generalized contact process) in which

$$
0 \rightarrow 1 \quad \text { at rate } \beta f_{1} \quad 1 \rightarrow 0 \quad \text { at rate } \delta+\gamma f_{1}
$$

In this case the mean field ODE is

$$
\frac{d u}{d t}=\beta u(1-u)-u(\delta+\gamma u)=(\beta+\gamma) u\left(\frac{\beta-\delta}{\beta+\gamma}-u\right)
$$

so we will have survival under fast stirring if $\beta>\delta$.
Our next example leads to a three-dimensional ODE. However, as the proof will make clear, this example is better classified with the
two-species systems considered in this section rather than with the three-species systems considered in Sections 6 and 7.

Example 2.5. Linear competition without exclusion. In this model, each site can be in a state $0,1,2$, or 3 where 0 is vacant, $i=1,2$ indicate sites occupied by types 1 or 2 , and $3=1+2$ indicates a site occupied by both types. To have a general but manageable model we will have proportional birth rates, but restrict our attention to constant death rates. Letting $f_{i}$ be the fraction of neighbors in state $i$, we can write the transition rates of the model as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{11} f_{1}+\beta_{13} f_{3} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
0 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{22} f_{2}+\beta_{23} f_{3} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2} \\
2 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{31} f_{1}+\beta_{33} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 2 & \delta_{3} \\
1 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{42} f_{2}+\beta_{43} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 1 & \delta_{4}
\end{array}
$$

Apart from a change of notation this is the general model introduced on page 12 of Durrett and Neuhauser (1997) for the competition of two strains of the barley yellow dwarf virus. Caswell and Etter (1992) have earlier formulated a similar model in discrete time.

Schinazi (1996) and (1998) has considered special cases of our model in which the presence of the other type on the source or target site does not change the birth rate of the species. In symbols:

$$
\beta_{11}=\beta_{13}=\beta_{31}=\beta_{33}=\beta_{1}, \quad \beta_{22}=\beta_{23}=\beta_{42}=\beta_{43}=\beta_{2}
$$

In his (1996) predator-prey paper, the death rates are

$$
\delta_{1}=0, \quad \delta_{2}=\delta_{2}, \quad \delta_{3}=\phi, \quad \delta_{4}=0
$$

In words, a predator on a site not occupied by a prey dies at rate $\delta_{2}$, while a prey is eaten by a predator on the same site at rate $\phi$. In his (1998) competition model

$$
\delta_{1}=\delta_{1}, \quad \delta_{2}=\delta_{2}, \quad \delta_{3}=p \phi, \quad \delta_{4}=(1-p) \phi
$$

In words, at each doubly occupied site a competition occurs which lasts an exponential amount of time with mean $1 / \phi$. At the end of the fight, 2 is the victor with probability $p$ and 1 wins with probability $1-p$.

Returning to the general model, we can write the mean field ODE as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{11} u_{0} u_{1}+\beta_{13} u_{0} u_{3}-\beta_{42} u_{1} u_{2}-\beta_{43} u_{1} u_{3} \\
& -u_{1} \delta_{1}+u_{3} \delta_{4} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{22} u_{0} u_{2}+\beta_{23} u_{0} u_{3}-\beta_{31} u_{2} u_{1}-\beta_{33} u_{2} u_{3}  \tag{2.5.1}\\
& -u_{2} \delta_{2}+u_{3} \delta_{3} \\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =\beta_{31} u_{2} u_{1}+\beta_{33} u_{2} u_{3}+\beta_{42} u_{1} u_{2}+\beta_{43} u_{1} u_{3} \\
& -u_{3}\left(\delta_{3}+\delta_{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

To help check this note that a term $\beta_{k j} u_{i} u_{j}$ corresponds to sites of type $j$ giving birth onto those of type $i$ resulting in a site with state $k \wedge 3$. Note that we cannot factor $u_{i}$ out of the equation for $d u_{i} / d t$ so this does not have the Lotka-Volterra form.

To begin to analyze this system we look at the invadability conditions. If $\beta_{11}>\delta_{1}$ then in the absence of individuals of type 2 , there are no sites in states 2 or 3 and the 1's reach an equilibrium density of

$$
\sigma_{1}=\frac{\beta_{11}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{11}}
$$

Using Definitions 4 and 2 we can write this conclusion as $1 \succ 0$ and $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$. To investigate the stability of this fixed point we note that if $u_{1}=\sigma_{1}$ and $0 \leq u_{2}, u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ then $u_{0} \approx 1-\sigma_{1}$ so dropping $u_{2} u_{3} \approx \epsilon^{2}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} \approx & \beta_{22}\left(1-\sigma_{1}\right) u_{2}+\beta_{23}\left(1-\sigma_{1}\right) u_{3}-\beta_{31} \sigma_{1} u_{2} \\
& \quad-u_{2} \delta_{2}+u_{3} \delta_{3}  \tag{2.5.2}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} \approx & \beta_{31} \sigma_{1} u_{2}+\beta_{42} \sigma_{1} u_{2}+\beta_{43} \sigma_{1} u_{3}-u_{3}\left(\delta_{3}+\delta_{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

This is a linear system of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{j}}{d t}=\sum_{k=2}^{3} b_{j k} u_{k} \quad j=2,3 \tag{2.5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with matrix $b_{i j}$ given by:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
b_{22}=\beta_{22}\left(1-\sigma_{1}\right)-\beta_{31} \sigma_{1}-\delta_{2} & b_{23}=\beta_{23}\left(1-\sigma_{1}\right)+\delta_{3}>0 \\
b_{32}=\beta_{31} \sigma_{1}+\beta_{42} \sigma_{1}>0 & b_{33}=\beta_{43} \sigma_{1}-\delta_{3}-\delta_{4}
\end{array}
$$

Using Definition 5 from Section 1, we say that species 2 and 3 can invade species 1 in equilibrium, and write $2,3 \succ 1$ if there is a linear combination $z=\omega_{2} u_{2}+\omega_{3} u_{3}$ with $\omega_{i}>0$ so that if $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma_{1}, 0,0\right)$ through $\Gamma^{+}$then

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t}>0
$$

To see what the definition says in this problem, we note that by scaling one can without loss of generality consider $\omega_{2}=\theta, \omega_{3}=(1-\theta)$ where $\theta \in(0,1)$. From the form of the differential equation in (2.5.3) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d\left(\theta u_{2}+(1-\theta) u_{3}\right)}{d t} & =\left\{\theta b_{22}+(1-\theta) b_{32}\right\} u_{2}  \tag{2.5.4}\\
& +\left\{\theta b_{23}+(1-\theta) b_{33}\right\} u_{3}
\end{align*}
$$

The off-diagonal entries $b_{23}$ and $b_{32}$ are strictly positive, so if $b_{22} \geq 0$ then we can pick $\theta$ close to 1 and have the coefficients of $u_{2}$ and $u_{3}$ on the right-hand side of (2.5.4) both positive, thus ensuring that $\theta u_{2}+(1-\theta) u_{3}$ is increasing in the original system (2.5.1) when $0 \leq$ $u_{2}, u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $\left|u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right| \leq \epsilon$. If $b_{33} \geq 0$ then we can do this by picking $\theta$ close to 0 . To deal with the case in which $b_{22}, b_{33}<0$ we note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (1-\theta) b_{32}+\theta b_{22} \text { goes from }+ \text { to }- \text { at } \theta_{1}=b_{32} /\left(b_{32}-b_{22}\right) \\
& (1-\theta) b_{33}+\theta b_{23} \text { goes from - to }+ \text { at } \theta_{2}=-b_{33} /\left(b_{23}-b_{33}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus we can pick $\theta$ to make both coefficients positive if and only if $\theta_{1}>\theta_{2}$. Cross multiplying we see that this is equivalent to

$$
b_{32}\left(b_{23}-b_{33}\right)>-b_{33}\left(b_{32}-b_{22}\right)
$$

or that the determinant, $b_{33} b_{22}-b_{32} b_{23}<0$.
Combining the results in the previous paragraph, we see that for $2,3 \succ 1$ it is sufficient that

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{22} \geq 0, \quad \text { or } \quad b_{33} \geq 0, \quad \text { or } \quad b_{33} b_{22}-b_{32} b_{23}<0 \tag{2.5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

To see that this is also necessary, recall that the trace of $b$ is the sum of the eigenvalues, $\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}$ while the determinant is the product $\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}$.

From this we see that if $b_{22}<0, b_{33}<0$, and $b_{33} b_{22}-b_{32} b_{23}>0$, then the real parts of the two eigenvalues are negative, so the origin is attracting and hence $\omega_{2} u_{2}+\omega_{3} u_{3}$ cannot be increasing.

To get a mental picture of the linearization when invadability occurs, note that the invariance of $\Gamma$ implies that the eigenvalues will be real. Consider the case in which the trace and the determinant are both negative. In this case there is one positive eigenvalue and one negative eigenvalue, so $(0,0)$ is a saddle point with the unstable direction pointing into the positive quadrant and the stable direction (which is perpendicular) having exactly one negative component. On the other hand if $b_{22}$ and $b_{33}$ are both large enough then the trace and determinant will both be positive, so both eigenvalues will be positive.

Interchanging the roles of 2's and 1's we see that if there are no individuals of type 1 , then there are no sites in states 1 and 3 , so the equilibrium density of type 2 is

$$
\sigma_{2}=\frac{\beta_{22}-\delta_{2}}{\beta_{22}}
$$

assuming, of course, that $\beta_{22}>\delta_{2}$. Repeating the calculations from the first case we can derive conditions for $1,3 \succ 2$ from (2.5.5).


Figure 2.3.

Theorem 2.5. Suppose that $\beta_{11}>\delta_{1}, \beta_{22}>\delta_{2}, 2,3 \succ 1$, and $1,3 \succ$ 2. Then with fast stirring there is coexistence for linear competition without exclusion.

Proof of Theorem 2.5. The details of the proof are very similar to those for Theorem 1.1. We begin at the origin and work our way out. See Figure 2.3. To handle this region near $(0,0,0)$ we look at the linearization which results from ignoring all terms of the form $u_{i} u_{j}$ with $i, j \geq 1$ in (2.5.1)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & \approx\left(\beta_{11}-\delta_{1}\right) u_{1}+\left(\beta_{13}+\delta_{4}\right) u_{3} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & \approx\left(\beta_{22}-\delta_{2}\right) u_{2}+\left(\beta_{23}+\delta_{3}\right) u_{3} \\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & \approx-u_{3}\left(\delta_{3}+\delta_{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Summing the three equations gets rid of the negative term in the third one producing

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right) \approx\left(\beta_{11}-\delta_{1}\right) u_{1}+\left(\beta_{22}-\delta_{2}\right) u_{2}+\left(\beta_{13}+\beta_{23}\right) u_{3}
$$

which has all coefficients positive on the right-hand side. Let

$$
h_{0}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, u_{3}\right)=\log ^{-}\left\{\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right) / 4 \eta_{0}\right\}
$$

If $\alpha=\min \left\{\beta_{11}-\delta_{1}, \beta_{22}-\delta_{2}, \beta_{13}+\beta_{23}\right\}$ and $\eta_{0}$ is chosen small enough (2.5.6) $\frac{d h_{0}}{d t}=\frac{-1}{u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}} \cdot \frac{d\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right)}{d t} \leq-\frac{\alpha}{2} \quad$ when $v<4 \eta_{0}$
i.e., $h_{0}$ is a repelling function for $\{(0,0,0)\}$.

Having covered the corner, we move to
$E d g e \Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$. In the absence of other species 1 's reach an equilibrium density of $\sigma_{1}$, so (a) of Proposition 1.1 holds. The invadability condition $2,3 \succ 1$ furnishes us with constants $\omega_{2}^{1}$ and $\omega_{3}^{1}$ which we can use to define $z_{1}=\omega_{2}^{1} u_{2}+\omega_{3}^{1} u_{3}$ so that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1 now with $\epsilon_{1} \leq \eta_{0}$, and letting $g_{1}(u)=u-\sigma_{1} \log u$, we see that if $\theta_{1} \leq 1, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}, \nu_{1}$ and $B_{1}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{1}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{1}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, u_{3}\right)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{1} \psi_{1}\left(u_{1}\right) z_{1}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log z_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}<0$ when $\epsilon_{1} \leq u_{1} \leq 1$ and $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$, and (ii) $d h_{1} / d t \leq B_{1}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \vee M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$.

A similar construction can be done on the
$E d g e \Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$. In the absence of other species 2's reach an equilibrium density of $\sigma_{2}$, so (a) of Proposition 1.1 holds. The invadability condition $1,3 \succ 2$ furnishes us with constants $\omega_{1}^{2}$ and $\omega_{3}^{2}$, which we can use to define $z_{2}=\omega_{1}^{2} u_{1}+\omega_{3}^{2} u_{3}$ so that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1 again and letting $g_{2}(u)=u-\sigma_{2} \log u$, we see that if $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}$, $\eta_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}, \nu_{2}$ and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{2}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{2}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}, u_{3}\right)=g_{2}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{2} \psi\left(u_{2}\right) z_{2}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log z_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $\epsilon_{2} \leq u_{2} \leq 1$ and $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$, and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \vee M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{2}<\eta_{2}$.

Denouement. (ii) is not a problem in either case because of (2.5.6). Thus if $K_{1} \geq 1$ is chosen large $\phi=K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for two edges $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$. Applying Proposition 1 to $\phi$ shows that if the initial condition $u(0, x) \in \Gamma$ is continuous, and has $u_{i}(0, x) \geq \eta_{i}>0$ when $x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{2}$. There are constants $\kappa>0$, $\gamma_{i}>0$, and $t_{0}<\infty$, which only depend on $\eta_{i}$ and $\delta$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{2}^{1} u_{2}(t, x)+\omega_{3}^{1} u_{3}(t, x) \geq \gamma_{1}>0 \quad \omega_{1}^{2} u_{1}(t, x)+\omega_{3}^{2} u_{3}(t, x) \geq \gamma_{2}>0 \tag{2.5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $|x| \leq \kappa t$ and $t \geq t_{0}$. Using the dynamics of the model, it is not hard to improve the last conclusion to: there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i} \quad \text { when }|x| \leq \kappa(t-3)-1 \text { and } t \geq t_{0}+3 \tag{2.5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Once (2.5.8) is established, which will be done in Lemma 3.3, the result follows from Proposition 2.
3. Lower bounding lemmas for PDE. Here we will be concerned with completing the three unfinished proofs from Section 2. This will be done with the help of Lemmas 3.1-3.4. In this section we will often be working with cubes, so we will use the "box" norm $\|x\|=\max _{i}\left|x_{i}\right|$ for $x \in \mathbf{R}^{d}$. Referring to (2.2.5) and (2.2.6) we see that to finish the proof of Theorem 2.2 it is enough to show

Lemma 3.1. Given $a, \gamma>0$ there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that if

$$
a u_{1}(0, y)+u_{2}(0, y) \geq \gamma \quad \text { for } y \in[-1,1]^{d}
$$

then for $i=1,2, u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i}$ for $x \in[1,1]^{d}$ and $3 \leq t \leq 4$.
Proof. Since (v) holds, each coordinate has a lower bound of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t} \geq \Delta u_{i}-\alpha_{i} u_{i} \tag{3.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (3.1.1) we see that if $p_{t}(x, y)$ is the transition probability for Brownian motion (run at rate 2 since we have $\Delta$ instead of $\Delta / 2$ ) then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq e^{-\alpha_{i} t} \int p_{t}(x, y) u_{i}(0, y) d y \tag{3.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $p_{t}(x, t)=(4 \pi t)^{-d / 2} \exp \left(-|y-x|^{2} / 4 t\right)$ it is easy to see that there is a constant $c_{1,4}$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}(x, y) \geq c_{1,4} \tag{3.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

if $\|x\|,\|y\| \leq 1$ and $1 \leq t \leq 4$. From this follows that if $\|x\| \leq 1$ and $1 \leq t \leq 4$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq e^{-4 \alpha_{i}} \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} c_{1,4} u_{i}(0, y) d y \tag{3.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $a u_{1}(0, y)+u_{2}(0, y) \geq \eta$ whenever $\|y\| \leq 1$ then either

$$
\text { A. } \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{1}(0, y) d y \geq 2^{d} \eta / 2 a \quad \text { or } \quad B . \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{2}(0, y) d y \geq 2^{d} \eta / 2
$$

for otherwise, we would have a contradiction. In Case A, (3.1.4) implies that for all $1 \leq t \leq 4$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{1}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{1} \equiv e^{-3 \alpha_{i}} c_{1,4} \cdot 2^{d} \eta / 2 a \tag{3.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is more than we promised to show for the first coordinate. To get a lower bound for $u_{2}$ we will use the second equation from (2.2.1)

$$
\begin{equation*}
d u_{2} / d t=\Delta u_{2}-\delta_{2} u_{2}+\gamma u_{1} \tag{3.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and its probabilistic solution:

Lemma 3.1.1. The equation $d u / d t=\Delta u(t, x)-c(t, x) u(t, x)+g(t, x)$ is solved by

$$
u(t, x)=E_{x}\left(\exp \left(-c_{t}^{t}\right) u\left(0, B_{t}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} \exp \left(-c_{r}^{t}\right) g\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) d s\right)
$$

where $B_{s}$ is Brownian motion run at rate $2, E_{x}$ denotes expected value starting from $B_{0}=x$, and $c_{r}^{t}=\int_{0}^{r} c\left(t-s, B_{s}\right) d s$.

Proof. This is a straightforward combination of the ideas in Sections 4.2 and 4.3 of Durrett (1996). It suffices to show that if $u$ satisfies the PDE then
$(\star) \quad M_{s}=\exp \left(-c_{s}^{t}\right) u\left(t-s, B_{s}\right)+\int_{0}^{s} \exp \left(c_{r}^{t}\right) g\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) d r$
is a martingale. For then taking $E_{x} M_{t}$ gives the desired formula. To prove $(\star)$ we let $X_{s}=c_{s}^{t}, Y_{t}=t-s, Z_{s}=B_{s}$ and use Ito's formula on $e^{-X_{s}} u\left(Y_{s}, Z_{s}\right)$ to conclude that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\exp \left(-c_{s}^{t}\right) u & \left(t-s, B_{s}\right)-u\left(t, B_{0}\right) \\
& =\int_{0}^{s} \exp \left(-c_{r}^{t}\right) u\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) \cdot\left(-c\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r \\
& +\int_{0}^{s} \exp \left(-c_{r}^{t}\right) u_{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) \cdot(-1) d r \\
& + \text { martingale }+\int_{0}^{s} \exp \left(-c_{r}^{t}\right) \Delta u\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) d r
\end{aligned}
$$

The PDE implies that $-c\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) u\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)-u_{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)+\Delta u(t-$ $\left.r, B_{r}\right)=g\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)$, from which the desired result follows.

Our main interest in Lemma 3.1.1 is to prove the next comparison theorem, which is an immediate consequence.

Lemma 3.1.2. Suppose $d u / d t=\Delta u-\delta(t, x) u(t, x)+g(t, x)$ where $\delta(t, x) \leq \hat{\delta}$ and $0 \leq \hat{g}(t, x) \leq g(t, x)$ then

$$
u(t, x) \geq E_{x}\left(e^{-\hat{\delta} t} u\left(0, B_{t}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} e^{-\hat{\delta} s} \hat{g}\left(t-s, B_{s}\right) d s\right)
$$

Proof of Lemma 3.1. Using Lemma 3.1.2 on (3.1.6) and with the lower bounds in (3.1.5), we have that for $3 \leq t \leq 4$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$.

$$
\begin{gathered}
u_{2}(t, x) \geq E_{x} \int_{1}^{2} e^{-\delta(t-r)} \cdot \gamma \epsilon_{1} \cdot 1\left\{B_{t-r} \in[-1,1]^{d}\right\} d r \\
\geq e^{-3 \delta} \cdot \gamma \epsilon_{1} \cdot 2^{d} c_{1,4} \geq \epsilon_{2}
\end{gathered}
$$

Combining this inequality with (3.1.5) gives the result in case A. In Case B, (3.1.4) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{2}(t, x) \geq \hat{\epsilon}_{2} \equiv e^{-4 \alpha_{i}} c_{1,4} \cdot 2^{d} \eta / 2 \tag{3.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $1 \leq t \leq 4$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$. To get a lower bound for $u_{1}$ we rewrite the first equation in (1.2.1) and then use the inequality

$$
\begin{align*}
d u_{1} / d t & =\Delta u_{1}+\beta u_{2}\left(1-u_{2}\right)-\left(\gamma+\delta_{1}+\beta u_{2}\right) u_{1}  \tag{3.1.8}\\
& \geq \Delta u_{1}+\beta u_{2}\left(1-u_{2}\right)-\kappa u_{1}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\kappa=\gamma+\delta_{1}+\beta$. To make this useful we have to have an upper bound on $u_{2}$. Using the inequality

$$
\frac{d u_{2}(t, x)}{d t} \leq \Delta u_{2}+\gamma\left(1-u_{2}\right)-\delta u_{2}
$$

and comparing with the solution of the ODE:

$$
d v_{2}(t) / d t=\gamma\left(1-u_{2}\right)-\delta u_{2} \quad v_{2}(0)=1
$$

which is decreasing in $t$, we conclude that $u_{2}(t, x) \leq v_{2}(t)$ and hence that if $t \geq 1$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{2}(t, x) \leq v_{2}(1) \tag{3.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using Lemma 3.1.2 on (3.1.8), with the bounds in (3.1.9) and (3.1.7) now we have that when $3 \leq t \leq 4$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$.

$$
u_{1}(t, x) \geq E_{x} \int_{1}^{2} e^{-\kappa(t-r)} \cdot \beta_{2} \hat{\epsilon}_{2}\left(1-v_{2}(1)\right) \cdot 1\left\{B_{t-r} \in[-2,2]^{d}\right\} d r \geq \hat{\epsilon}_{1}
$$

This completes case B and hence the proof of Lemma 3.1.
To complete the proof of Theorem 2.3, we let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& v_{A}(t, x)=u_{A A}(0, x)+u_{A a}(0, x) / 2 \\
& v_{A}(t, x)=u_{a a}(0, x)+u_{A a}(0, x) / 2
\end{aligned}
$$

By (2.3.5) and (2.3.6) it is enough to show
Lemma 3.2. Given $\gamma_{i}>0$ there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that if $v_{A}(0, x) \geq \gamma_{1}$ and $v_{a}(0, x) \geq \gamma_{2}$ for $x \in[-1,1]^{d}$ and $0 \leq t \leq 1$ then $u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i}$ for $x \in[1,1]^{d}$ and $2 \leq t \leq 3$.

Remark. The result is different here and the proof simpler than for Lemma 3.1. The quantities bounded in Proposition 1 can be used to give lower bounds on the right hand side of the ODE, so we do not need the initial bootstrapping or a division into cases.

Proof. We begin by recalling the mean-field ODE given in (4.3.1):

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{A A}}{d t} & =\mu_{A A} \cdot v_{A}^{2}-\psi(u) u_{A A} \\
\frac{d u_{A a}}{d t} & =\mu_{A a} \cdot 2 v_{A} v_{a}-\psi(u) u_{A a}  \tag{3.2.1}\\
\frac{d u_{a a}}{d t} & =\mu_{a a} \cdot v_{a}^{2}-\psi(u) u_{a a}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\psi(u)=\sum_{i j} \beta_{i j}(u) \leq \mu_{A a} \leq 1$. If we let

$$
\alpha=\min \left\{\mu_{A A} \gamma_{1}^{2}, 2 \mu_{A a} \gamma_{1} \gamma_{2}, \mu_{a a} \gamma_{2}^{2}\right\}
$$

then each coordinate has a lower bound of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u_{i j}}{\partial t} \geq \Delta u_{i j}+g(t, x)-u_{i j} \tag{3.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g(t, x)=\alpha$ if $0 \leq t \leq 1$ and $x \in[-1,1]^{d}$. Using Lemma 3.1.2 now, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{i j}(t, x) & \geq E_{x} \int_{0}^{1} e^{-(t-r)} g\left(r, B_{t-r}\right) d r \\
& \geq \alpha e^{-3} \int_{0}^{1} P_{x}\left(B_{t-r} \in[-1,1]^{d}\right) d r \geq \alpha e^{-3} \cdot 2^{d} c_{14}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $2 \leq t \leq 3$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$, which proves the desired conclusion.
In view of (2.5.7) and (2.5.8) we can complete the proof of Theorem 2.5 by showing

Lemma 3.3. Given $\omega_{j}^{i}, \gamma_{i}>0$ there are constants $\epsilon_{i}>0$ so that if

$$
\omega_{2}^{1} u_{2}(0, x)+\omega_{3}^{1} u_{3}(0, x) \geq \gamma_{1} \quad \text { and } \quad \omega_{1}^{2} u_{1}(0, x)+\omega_{3}^{2} u_{3}(0, x) \geq \gamma_{2}
$$

for $x \in[-1,1]^{d}$ then for $i=1,2,3, u_{i}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{i}$ for $x \in[1,1]^{d}$ and $3 \leq t \leq 4$.

Proof. Condition (v) implies that each coordinate has a lower bound of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t} \geq \Delta u_{i}-\alpha_{i} u_{i} \tag{3.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (3.1.2) and (3.1.3), we see that if $\|x\| \leq 1$ and $1 \leq t \leq 4$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq e^{-4 \alpha_{i}} \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} c_{1,4} u_{i}(0, y) d y \tag{3.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Pick $\nu$ small enough so that $\gamma_{1}-\omega_{3}^{1} \nu>0$ and $\gamma_{2}-\omega_{3}^{2} \nu>0$. Either

$$
\text { A. } \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{3}(0, y) d y \geq 2^{d} \nu \quad \text { or } \quad \text { B. } \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{3}(0, y) d y<2^{d} \nu
$$

In Case A, (3.3.2) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{3}(t, x) \geq \epsilon_{3} \equiv c_{1,4} e^{-4 \alpha_{i}} \cdot 2^{d} \nu \tag{3.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $1 \leq t \leq 4$ and $\|x\| \leq 1$. To get a lower bound for $u_{1}$ and $u_{2}$ we will use the inequalities

$$
\begin{align*}
& d u_{1} / d t \geq \Delta u_{1}-\alpha_{1} u_{1}+\delta_{4} u_{3} \\
& d u_{2} / d t \geq \Delta u_{2}-\alpha_{2} u_{2}+\delta_{3} u_{3} \tag{3.3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

which improve (3.3.1) by keeping one positive term. Using Lemma 3.1.2 on (3.3.4) with the bound in (3.3.3) we have that when $\|x\| \leq 1$, $3 \leq t \leq 4$, and $i=1,2$

$$
u_{i}(t, x) \geq E_{x} \int_{1}^{2} e^{-\alpha_{i}(t-r)} \cdot \delta_{5-i} \epsilon_{3} \cdot 1\left\{B_{t-r} \in[-1,1]^{d}\right\} d r \geq \epsilon_{i}
$$

In Case B, by our assumption and choice of $\nu$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{2}(0, y) d y \geq 2^{d}\left(\gamma_{1}-\omega_{3}^{1} \nu\right) / \omega_{2}^{1}>0  \tag{3.3.5}\\
& \int_{[-1,1]^{d}} u_{1}(0, y) d y \geq 2^{d}\left(\gamma_{2}-\omega_{3}^{2} \nu\right) / \omega_{1}^{2}>0
\end{align*}
$$

Using (3.3.2) now gives lower bounds for $i=1,2$

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(t, x) \geq \hat{\epsilon}_{i} \quad \text { for }\|x\| \leq 1 \text { and } 1 \leq t \leq 4 \tag{3.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

To get a lower bound for $u_{3}$ we will use the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
d u_{3} / d t \geq \Delta u_{3}-\alpha_{3} u_{3}+\left(\beta_{31}+\beta_{42}\right) u_{1} u_{2} \tag{3.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which again comes from improving (3.3.1) by keeping positive terms. Using Lemma 3.1 .2 on (3.3.7) with the lower bound in (3.3.6), we see that or $\|x\| \leq 1$ and $3 \leq t \leq 4$,
$u_{3}(t, x) \geq E_{x} \int_{1}^{2} e^{-\alpha_{3}(t-r)} \cdot\left(\beta_{31}+\beta_{42}\right) \hat{\epsilon}_{1} \hat{\epsilon}_{2} \cdot 1\left\{B_{t-r} \in[-1,1]^{d}\right\} d r \geq \hat{\epsilon}_{3}$
This completes case B and hence the proof of Lemma 3.3.
4. Perturbation of higher dimensional systems. In order to prove results for three-species we need perturbation results that generalize those in Section 1. In this section we will prove three results that allows us to extend a Lyapunov function $g$ defined on an $m$ dimensional face

$$
F_{m}=\left\{u \in \Gamma: u_{m+1}=0, \ldots u_{n}=0\right\}
$$

to be a repelling function in a neighborhood of that face (in $\Gamma$ ). We need three results because in the case $m=2$, the boundary fixed point may have 2,1 , or 0 positive components.

To set up for our first theorem we need some notation. It is natural to separate the variables in the face $F_{m}$ from those in the perturbation. Let $w=\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{m}\right)$ be the first $m$ coordinates. As in Section 1, the perturbation will involve a positive linear combination of the last $n-m$ coordinates

$$
z=\sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \omega_{k} u_{k} \quad \text { where each of the } \omega_{k}>0
$$

In our new setting, $z$ is a number while $w$ is a vector in $\mathbf{R}^{m}$ with $m>$ 1. To bridge this gap let $1_{k}$ be the vector in $\mathbf{R}^{k}$ with all components equal to 1 and let $0_{k}$ be the vector of $k 0$ 's. We will use the norm $\|z\|=\sup _{i}\left|z_{i}\right|$ throughout and in particular, when we define Lipschitz continuity.

In dimension $m=1$ we can always take $g(u)=u-\sigma_{1} \log u$ when $\sigma_{1}>0$ and $g(u)=u$ when $\sigma_{1}=0$. In dimensions $m>1$ we cannot always use simple explicit Lyapunov functions, so we need to introduce assumptions (a), (d), and (e) to control their behavior. Assumption (b) gives the invadability condition as it did in Section 1. Finally, in (c) we take the luxury of imposing bounds on the absolute value of the derivatives, since they will be satisfied in all of the examples we consider. In dimension $m=1$ the problem region was only near $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon$. Here, it is much larger, $0<\min w_{i} \leq \epsilon$, and there are more derivatives $\partial g / \partial w_{m}$ to worry about.

Proposition 4.1. Suppose that (a) $g(w)$ is decreasing on the face $F_{m}$ and strictly decreasing for $w$ with strictly positive coordinates and $w \neq \sigma$.
(b) If $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma, 0_{n-m}\right)$ from inside $\Gamma_{+}$, then $\lim \inf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 3 \alpha_{0}>0$.
(c) $\quad|d z / d t| \leq C_{c} z$ and for each $1 \leq i \leq m, \quad\left|d u_{i} / d t\right| \leq C_{c} u_{i}$
(d) For each $1 \leq i \leq m, \quad\left|\partial g / \partial w_{i}\right| \leq C_{d} / w_{i}$
(e) $\partial g / \partial w_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{w \in \Gamma_{m}: \min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon\right\}$ with constant $C_{L, \epsilon}$

Let $0<\epsilon<\min _{i} \sigma_{i} / 2$. If positive constants $\theta, \lambda, \eta, \nu$, and $B$ are chosen appropriately with $\theta \leq 1$ and $\eta \leq \epsilon$ then

$$
h(u)=g\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\lambda \log z
$$

satisfies: (i) $d h / d t \leq-\nu<0$ when $\epsilon \leq \min _{i} w_{i}$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
and (ii) $d h / d t \leq B$ when $0 \leq \min _{i} w_{i} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
Proof of Proposition 4.1. Calculus tells us that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)\left(\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}+\theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right)-\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We begin by checking (ii) since it is only two lines. Using assumptions
(d) and (c), it follows that if $1 \leq i \leq m$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(u+\theta z 1_{m}\right)\left(\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}+\theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right)\right| \leq C_{d} C_{c} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (c) again we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\frac{d z}{d t}\right| \leq C_{c} z \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (4.1)-(4.3) proves (ii) with $B=C_{d} C_{c}+\lambda C_{c}$.
Proof of (i). To begin, we note that (b) implies we can pick $\eta_{1}<\min _{i} \sigma_{i} / 2$ so that if $\|u-\sigma\| \leq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{1}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\lambda}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 2 \alpha_{0} \lambda>0 \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Our first goal is the control the derivative $d h / d t$ away from the fixed point.

Lemma 4.1.1. Given $\epsilon$ and $\eta_{1}$, there are $\alpha_{1}, \eta_{2}, \lambda_{0}>0$ so that if $0 \leq \theta \leq 1$ and $\lambda \leq \lambda_{0}$ then

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq-\alpha_{1}<0
$$

when $\min w_{i} \geq \epsilon,\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.
Proof of Lemma 4.1.1. We begin by writing the term inside the sum in (4.1) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t} & +\left\{\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w)\right\} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}  \tag{4.5}\\
& +\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right) \cdot \theta \frac{d z}{d t}
\end{align*}
$$

By the strict decreasing property in (a) we can define a constant $\alpha_{1}$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\left(w, 0_{n-m}\right) \leq-3 \alpha_{1} \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon$ and $\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$. Using the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ when $\min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon$, which comes from (d), and the continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$ it follows that if $\eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}(u) \leq-2 \alpha_{1} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon,\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$.
Using the Lipschitz continuity assumed in (e) it follows that if $\min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\{\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w)\right\} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\right| \leq C_{L, \epsilon} C_{c} \theta \eta_{2} \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

With the proof of Lemma 4.2 in mind, note that for (4.8) (and for (4.9) below) we do not need to exclude the region near the fixed point.

For the last term in (4.5) we note that using (d) and (4.3) it follows that when $\min _{i} w_{i} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$ we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right) \cdot \theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{\epsilon} \cdot C_{c} \theta z \leq \frac{C_{d} C_{c}}{\epsilon} \theta \eta_{2} \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (4.7)-(4.9) with (4.5) and (4.4) we see that if $\theta \leq 1$ then the right hand side of (4.1) is

$$
\leq-2 \alpha_{1}+m\left(C_{L, \epsilon} C_{c}+\frac{C_{d} C_{c}}{\epsilon}\right) \eta_{2}+C_{c} \lambda_{0} \leq-\alpha_{1}
$$

when $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$ if $\eta_{2}$ and $\lambda_{0}$ are chosen small enough.
To complete the proof of (i) in Proposition 4.1, we have to consider the region near the fixed point. To do this, we will prove

Lemma 4.1.2. Given $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$, if $\eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$ is chosen small enough

$$
\lim _{\theta \rightarrow 0}\left(\sup \left\{\frac{d h}{d t}:\|w-\sigma\| \leq \eta_{1}, 0<z \leq \eta_{3}\right\}\right) \leq-\lambda \alpha_{0}
$$

Proof of Lemma 4.1.2. Again we use (4.5). By (a), the first term has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\left(w, 0_{n-m}\right) \leq 0 \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $w \in \Delta_{m}^{+}$. Using the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ near the fixed point (which follows from (d)) and continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$ it follows that if $\eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}(u) \leq \lambda \alpha_{0} \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\|w-\sigma\| \leq \eta_{1}$ and $z \leq \eta_{3}$. Combining (4.11) with (4.8) and (4.9), then using (4.5), and (4.4), we have the right hand side of (4.1) is

$$
\leq \lambda \alpha_{0}+m\left(C_{L, \epsilon} C_{c}+\frac{C_{d} C_{c}}{\epsilon}\right) \theta \eta_{3}-2 \lambda \alpha_{0}
$$

when $\|u-\sigma\| \leq \eta_{1}, 0<z \leq \eta_{3}$ and the desired result follows.
For some our examples we will need extensions of Proposition 4.1 where one or both of the coordinates of our boundary equilibrium are 0 . For simplicity we restrict our attention to $m=2$. Note that the conditions on the derivatives in (d) and (e) have gotten stronger but the conclusion in (i) requires only that $w_{1} \geq \epsilon \operatorname{not} w_{1} \wedge w_{2} \geq \epsilon$

Proposition 4.2. Suppose that $m=2$ with $\sigma_{1}>0$ and $\sigma_{2}=0$.
(a) $g(w)$ is decreasing on the face $F_{m}$, strictly decreasing when $w_{1}>0, w \neq \sigma$.
(b) If $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma_{1}, 0_{n-1}\right)$ from inside $\Gamma_{+}$, then $\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 3 \alpha_{0}>0$.
(c) $\quad|d z / d t| \leq C_{c} z$ and for each $1 \leq i \leq m, \quad\left|d u_{i} / d t\right| \leq C_{c} u_{i}$
(d) $\left|\partial g_{1} / \partial w_{i}\right| \leq C_{d} / w_{1} \quad$ and $\quad\left|\partial g_{2} / \partial w_{i}\right| \leq C_{d} /\left(w_{1}+w_{2}\right)$
(e) $\partial g / \partial w_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{w \in \Gamma_{m}: w_{1} \geq \epsilon\right\}$ with constant $C_{L, \epsilon}$

Let $0<\epsilon<\sigma_{1} / 2$. If positive constants $\theta, \lambda, \eta, \nu$, and $B$ are chosen appropriately with $\theta \leq 1$ and $\eta \leq \epsilon$ then

$$
h(u)=g\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\lambda \log z
$$

satisfies: (i) $d h / d t \leq-\nu<0$ when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
and (ii) $d h / d t \leq B$ when $w_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta$.
Proof. We will follow the outline of Proposition 4.1. (c) is the same as in Proposition 4.1 but (d) is stronger, so repeating (4.1)-(4.3) proves (ii). (4.4) works as before and brings us to the proof of

Lemma 4.2.1. Given $\epsilon$ and $\eta_{1}$, there are $\alpha_{1}, \eta_{2}, \lambda_{0}>0$ so that if $0 \leq \theta \leq 1$ and $\lambda \leq \lambda_{0}$ then

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq-\alpha_{1}<0
$$

when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon,\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.

Proof. (4.5) is as before, but using the new condition (a) in (4.6) gives a constant $\alpha_{1}$ so that

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{2} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\left(w, 0_{n-m}\right) \leq-3 \alpha_{1}
$$

when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$. Using the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$, which comes from (d), and the continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$ it follows that if $\eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}(u) \leq-2 \alpha_{1}
$$

when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon,\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.
At this point we have proved the conclusion of (4.7) for $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$ rather than $\min _{i} w_{i}>\epsilon$. Thanks to our new assumptions, this pattern continues throughout the rest of the proof of Lemma 4.2.1. Using the Lipschitz continuity assumed in (e) it follows that if $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$, then

$$
\left|\left\{\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w)\right\} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\right| \leq C_{L, \epsilon} C_{c} \theta \eta_{2}
$$

Again for $\left(4.8^{\prime}\right)$ (and for (4.9') below) we do not need to exclude the region near the fixed point. For the last term in (4.5) we note that using (d) and (4.3) it follows that when $w_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$ we have that

$$
\left|\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right) \cdot \theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d} C_{c}}{\epsilon} \theta \eta_{2}
$$

Combining (4.7 $\mathbf{7}^{\prime}-\left(4.9^{\prime}\right)$ with (4.5) and (4.4) we can complete the proof as before.

To complete the proof of (i) of Proposition 4.2, we have to consider the region near the fixed point. Our new (a) and the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ near the fixed point allows us to conclude (4.11) holds when $\|w-\sigma\| \leq \eta$ and $z \leq \eta_{3}$, and the rest of the proof is the same as before.

For Example 2.3 we will need the special case when the fixed point is at the origin. The assumptions in (d) and (e) get stronger once again, but now there is no exceptional set in the conclusion.

Proposition 4.3. Suppose that $m=2$ and $\sigma_{1}=\sigma_{2}=0$.
(a) $\quad g(w)$ is decreasing on the face $F_{m}$ and strictly decreasing when $w_{1}+w_{2}>0$
(b) If $u \rightarrow 0_{n}$ from inside $\Gamma_{+}$, then $\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t} \geq 3 \alpha_{0}>0$
(c) $|d z / d t| \leq C_{c} z$ and for each $1 \leq i \leq m, \quad\left|d u_{i} / d t\right| \leq C_{c} u_{i}$
(d) For each $1 \leq i \leq m, \quad\left|\partial g / \partial w_{i}\right| \leq C_{d}$
(e) $\partial g / \partial w_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous with constant $C_{L}$

Let $0<\epsilon<\sigma_{1} / 2$. If positive constants $\theta, \lambda, \eta, \nu$, and $B$ are chosen appropriately with $\theta \leq 1$ and $\eta \leq \epsilon$ then

$$
h(u)=g\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\lambda \log z
$$

satisfies $d h / d t \leq-\nu<0$ when $0<z \leq \eta$.
Proof. We will follow the proof of Proposition 4.2, but the strong assumptions in (d) and (e) will make things easier. (4.2') becomes
(4.2 $\left.2^{\prime \prime}\right) \quad\left|\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(u+\theta z 1_{m}\right)\left(\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}+\theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right)\right| \leq C_{d} \cdot C_{c}\left(u_{i}+\theta z\right) \leq C_{d} C_{c}$

Turning to the proof of
Lemma 4.3.1. Given $\epsilon$ and $\eta_{1}$, there are $\alpha_{1}, \eta_{2}, \lambda_{0}>0$ so that if $0 \leq \theta \leq 1$ and $\lambda \leq \lambda_{0}$ then

$$
\frac{d h}{d t} \leq-\alpha_{1}<0
$$

when $\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.
Proof. (4.5) is as before, but using the new condition (a) in (4.6) gives a constant $\alpha_{1}$ so that

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{2} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\left(w, 0_{n-m}\right) \leq-3 \alpha_{1}
$$

when $\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$. Using the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ from (d), and the continuity of $d u_{i} / d t$ it follows that if $\eta_{2}$ is small then

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w) \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}(u) \leq-2 \alpha_{1}
$$

when, $\|w-\sigma\| \geq \eta_{1}$, and $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$.
At this point we have proved the conclusion of (4.7) for all $w$ rather than $w_{1}>\epsilon$. Thanks to our assumptions this pattern will continue throughout the rest of the proof. Using the Lipschitz continuity assumed in (e) it follows that if $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$, then
$\left(4.8^{\prime \prime}\right) \quad\left|\left\{\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right)-\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}(w)\right\} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}\right| \leq C_{L, \epsilon} C_{c} \theta \eta_{2}$
For the last term in (4.5) we note that using (d) and (4.3) it follows that when $0<z \leq \eta_{2}$ we have that

$$
\left|\frac{\partial g}{\partial x_{i}}\left(w+\theta z 1_{m}\right) \cdot \theta \frac{d z}{d t}\right| \leq C_{d} C_{c} \theta \eta_{2}
$$

Combining (4.7 $\left.7^{\prime \prime}\right)-\left(4.9^{\prime \prime}\right)$ together give Lemma 4.3.1.
It remains to consider the region near the fixed point. Our new (a) and the boundedness of $\partial g / \partial x_{i}$ allows us to conclude (4.11) holds when $\|w-\sigma\| \leq \eta$ and $z \leq \eta_{3}$ and the rest of the proof of Lemma 4.2 goes as before.
5. Lyapunov functions for Lotka-Volterra systems. In order to use the results in Section 4 to construct repelling functions for three-species systems, we need convex Lyapunov functions for each of the three two-dimensional systems on the faces that make up $\Gamma^{0}$. In this section we study the question when the mean field ODE has the Lotka-Volterra form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{j}}{d t}=u_{j}\left(r_{j}-\sum_{k} a_{j k} u_{k}\right) \quad j=1,2 \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

For our needs, it is sufficient to consider two cases.
I. competition. all $a_{i j}>0$.
II. exploiter-victim. $a_{21}<0$, the other $a_{i j}>0$.

Case II is simpler so we consider it first.
Lemma 5.0. In Case II if the Lotka-Volterra system (5.1) has a fixed point ( $\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}$ ) with each component $\rho_{i}>0$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=-a_{21}\left\{u_{1}-\rho_{1} \log u_{1}\right\}+a_{12}\left\{u_{2}-\rho_{2} \log u_{2}\right\} \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a convex Lyapunov function.
Proof. Since the $\rho_{i}>0, a_{21}<0$ and $a_{12}>0, h$ is convex. A little calculus shows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d h}{d t}= & -a_{21}\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)\left\{r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}-a_{12} u_{2}\right\} \\
& +a_{12}\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)\left\{r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}-a_{22} u_{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the fact that the $\rho_{i}$ are equilibrium probabilities and hence $r_{i}=a_{i 1} \rho_{1}+a_{i 2} \rho_{2}$ we can rewrite this as

$$
\frac{d h}{d t}=a_{11} a_{21}\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)^{2}-a_{12} a_{22}\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)^{2}<0 .
$$

For the last step, note that the cross terms $\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)$ cancel due to our choice of constants in the definition of $h$, while the assumed signs of the $a_{i j}$ make each coefficient negative.

We turn now to case I. In order for both species to have a possibility to survive we must have $r_{1}, r_{2}>0$. In the absence of the other species, type $i$ will reach an equilibrium level $\sigma_{i}=r_{i} / a_{i i}$. In the ( $u_{1}, u_{2}$ ) plane the derivative $d u_{i} / d t=0$ when $a_{i 1} u_{1}+a_{i 2} u_{2}=r_{i}$, i.e., on a straight line connecting $\left(r_{i} / a_{i 1}, 0\right)$ to $\left(0, r_{i} / a_{i 2}\right)$. There are several situations to consider.

Case 1. $r_{1} / a_{11}>r_{2} / a_{21}$ and $r_{2} / a_{22}>r_{1} / a_{12}$.
These inequalities guarantee the lines $d u_{i} / d t=0$ intersect at a point ( $\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}$ ) in the first quadrant. Rearranged they say $r_{2}<a_{21} \sigma_{1}$ and $r_{1}<a_{12} \sigma_{2}$ or using (2.1.7), they become $2 \nsucc 1$ and $1 \nsucc 2$. In words, neither species can invade the other.

To argue geometrically, note that the boundary fixed point ( $\sigma_{1}, 0$ ) is above the line $d u_{2} / d t=0$, see Figure 5.1, so $u_{2}$ will be decreasing in a neighborhood and ( $\sigma_{1}, 0$ ) will be locally attracting. Reversing roles, the boundary fixed point $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$ is above the line $d u_{1} / d t=0$, so again $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$ will be locally attracting. Once there are two locally attracting fixed points, there can be no convex Lyapunov function. This disappointing fact kills our interest in this case, so we leave it as an exercise to the reader to show that the interior fixed point ( $\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}$ ) is always a saddle point.


Figure 5.1.

Case 2. $r_{1} / a_{11}<r_{2} / a_{21}$ and $r_{2} / a_{22}<r_{1} / a_{12}$.
These inequalities also guarantee the lines $d u_{i} / d t=0$ intersect at a point $\left(\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}\right)$ in the first quadrant. Rearranged they say $r_{2}>a_{21} \sigma_{1}$ and $r_{1}>a_{12} \sigma_{2}$ or using (2.1.7), $2 \succ 1$ and $1 \succ 2$. In words, each species can invade the other.

To argue geometrically, note that the boundary fixed point $\left(\sigma_{1}, 0\right)$ is below the line $d u_{2} / d t=0$, see Figure 5.2 , so $u_{2}$ will be increasing in a neighborhood of the fixed point and 2 will be able to invade 1. Reversing roles, the boundary fixed point $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$ is below the line $d u_{1} / d t=0$ so 1 will be able to invade 2 .


Figure 5.2.
Our goal is to prove that the interior fixed point $\left(\rho_{1}, \rho_{2}\right)$ is attracting by showing

Lemma 5.1. Let $\kappa=a_{12} / a_{21}$. In Case 2

$$
\begin{equation*}
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1} \log u_{1}\right)+\kappa\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2} \log u_{2}\right) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a convex Lyapunov function.
Remarks. (5.3) bears a striking similarity to the Lyapunov function for the predator-prey case given in (5.2). However this time all the
$a_{i j}>0$, so we can't hope to cancel the off diagonal terms. In order to use this function with the result in Proposition 4.1, we will need bounds on the derivatives, so we note that

$$
\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{i}}\right|=\left|c\left(1-\rho_{i} / u_{i}\right)\right| \leq \frac{C_{c}}{u_{i}}
$$

for $u \in \Gamma_{+}$and $\partial h / \partial u_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{u \in \Gamma_{+}: u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \geq\right.$ $\epsilon\}$.

Proof. Since $\kappa>0, h$ is convex. A little calculus shows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d h}{d t}= & \left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)\left\{r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}-a_{12} u_{2}\right\} \\
& +\kappa\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)\left\{r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}-a_{22} u_{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the fact that the $\rho_{i}$ are equilibrium probabilities and hence $r_{i}=a_{i 1} \rho_{1}+a_{i 2} \rho_{2}$ we can rewrite this as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d h}{d t}= & -a_{11}\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)^{2}-a_{12}\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)  \tag{5.4}\\
& -\kappa a_{21}\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)\left(u_{1}-\rho_{1}\right)-\kappa a_{22}\left(u_{2}-\rho_{2}\right)^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

To check that the right-hand side is $<0$ except at the fixed point we want to prove that the matrix

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
a_{11} & a_{12} \\
\kappa a_{21} & \kappa a_{22}
\end{array}\right)
$$

is positive definite. Multiplying the matrix by the vector $(\theta, 1)$ on each side, what we want to establish is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{11} \theta^{2}+\left(a_{12}+\kappa a_{21}\right) \theta+\kappa a_{22}>0 \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $a_{11}>0$ this will be true if and only if there are no real roots for this quadratic equation, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(a_{12}+\kappa a_{21}\right)^{2}-4 a_{11} a_{22} \kappa<0 \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking $\kappa=a_{12} / a_{21}$ to simplify the square converts the last condition into

$$
4 a_{12}^{2}-4 a_{11} a_{22} \cdot \frac{a_{12}}{a_{21}}<0
$$

or simply that the determinant $a_{11} a_{22}-a_{12} a_{21}>0$. To check this, we have to use the inequalities that define case 2 . Rearranged they say

$$
\frac{a_{11}}{a_{21}}>\frac{r_{1}}{r_{2}} \quad \text { and } \quad \frac{r_{1}}{r_{2}}>\frac{a_{12}}{a_{22}}
$$

Combining the two inequalities and cross multiplying shows $a_{11} a_{22}-$ $a_{12} a_{21}>0$, completing the proof of Lemma 5.1.

Our first two cases for the competition model have considered the two possible ways that the lines $d u_{i} / d t=0$ can intersect in the positive quadrant. There are also two ways that the lines can fail to intersect there. We will consider here "Case 3a" in which $d u_{1} / d t=0$ lies above $d u_{2} / d t=0$ inside $\Gamma$. Since $\left(\sigma_{1}, 0\right)$ lies above $d u_{2} / d t=0$, it is locally attracting. Conversely, $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$ lies below $d u_{1} / d t=0$, so 1 's can invade the 2's. In this case we expect that the 1 's will drive the 2's to extinction. The next result constructs a Lyapunov function to prove this for the ODE.

Lemma 5.2. In Case 3a, if $0<\epsilon, \kappa, K<\infty$ are chosen appropriately, and we define $v_{i}=a_{i 1} u_{1}+a_{i 2} u_{2}$ then

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}+\kappa u_{2}+K \log ^{-}\left(v_{2} /\left(r_{2}+\epsilon\right)\right)
$$

is a convex Lyapunov function. In the degenerate case $\sigma_{2}=0$, it is possible to take

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}+\kappa u_{2}
$$

Remark. In order to use these functions with the results in Proposition 4.2 , we need bounds on the derivatives. Consulting (d) and (e) of that result, the desired bounds are

$$
\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{1}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u_{1}} \quad\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{2}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right)}
$$

for $u \in \Gamma_{+}$and $\partial h / \partial u_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{u \in \Gamma_{+}: u_{1} \geq \epsilon\right\}$. It is easy to see that these conditions are satisfied by the functions in Lemma 5.2.


Figure 5.3
Proof. It is clear that $h$ is convex. Letting $h_{1}=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}$ and $h_{2}=u_{2}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d h_{1}}{d t} & =\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right)\left\{r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}-a_{12} u_{2}\right\}  \tag{5.7}\\
\frac{d h_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}-a_{22} u_{2}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

Now $d h_{2} / d t<0$ when $v_{2}>r_{2}$ i.e., above $d u_{2} / d t=0$. On the other hand, using $r_{1}=a_{11} \sigma_{1}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h_{1}}{d t}=-a_{11}\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right)^{2}-\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right) a_{12} u_{2} \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

From this formula we can see that $d h_{1} / d t<0$ if $u_{1}>\sigma_{1}$. Using (5.7), we see that $d h_{1} / d t<0$ if $u_{1}<\sigma_{1}$ and $r_{1}>v_{1}$. Combining the two results gives us four regions to look at. See Figure 5.3. Here and in what follows all points we consider are assumed to lie in $\Gamma$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R_{1} . u_{1}>\sigma_{1}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t<0 \\
& R_{2} . u_{1} \leq \sigma_{1}, v_{1} \geq r_{1}: d h_{1} / d t \geq 0, d h_{2} / d t<0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R_{3} . r_{1}>v_{1}, v_{2}>r_{2}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t<0 \\
& R_{4} . v_{2} \leq r_{2}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t \geq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

In regions $R_{1}$ and $R_{3}$ we have $d h / d t<0$. To deal with $R_{2}$, we will choose $\kappa$ large. To see that this will succeed despite the fact that $d h_{2} / d t$ vanishes when $u_{2}=0$, note that (i) the only point on the boundary of $R_{2}$ with $u_{2}=0$ is ( $\sigma_{1}, 0$ ), and (ii) if we near that point inside $R_{2}$ we have $\left|u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right| \leq C u_{2}$, so $d h_{1} / d t=O\left(u_{2}^{2}\right)$ versus $d h_{2} / d t \sim c u_{2}$.

When $\sigma_{2}=0, R_{4}=\emptyset$ and we are done with the proof. To control the behavior in $R_{4}$ when $\sigma_{2}>0$, we will add a corner function. To do this, we observe that $d v_{2} / d t>0$ on $R_{4}=\left\{v_{2} \leq r_{2}\right\}$, so we can find an $\epsilon>0$ so that this this holds for $v_{2} \leq r_{2}+\epsilon$. Letting

$$
h_{3}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\log ^{-}\left(\frac{v_{2}}{r_{2}+\epsilon}\right)
$$

calculus tells us that

$$
\frac{d h_{3}}{d t}=\frac{-1}{v_{2}} \cdot \frac{d v_{2}}{d t}<0
$$

when $v_{2} \leq r_{2}+\epsilon$. As $v_{2} \rightarrow 0$,

$$
\frac{1}{v_{2}} \frac{d v_{2}}{d t} \rightarrow a_{21} r_{1}+a_{22} r_{2}>0
$$

so $d h_{3} / d t$ is bounded away from 0 on $R_{4}$. Since $d h_{2} / d t$ is bounded there, if $K$ is chosen large enough, $h_{1}+\kappa h_{2}+h_{3}$ is a Lyapunov function.

The previous result takes care of the competition case when the fixed point has one positive component, so we turn now to this case for the exploiter-victim system. The set $\left\{d u_{2} / d t=0\right\}$ is a line with positive slope

$$
u_{2}=\frac{r_{2}}{a_{22}}-\frac{a_{21}}{a_{22}} u_{1}
$$

There are two ways this can fail to intersect the line $\left\{d u_{1} / d t=0\right\}$ inside the positive quadrant: (a) 2's are a predator ( $r_{2}<0$ ) but the prey are not nutritious enough to sustain the predator:

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{2}-a_{21} \sigma_{1}<0 \quad \text { where } \sigma_{1}=r_{1} / a_{11} \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

or (b) 2's can survive on their own $\left(r_{2}>0\right)$ and cannot be invaded by the 1 's

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{1}-a_{12} \sigma_{2}<0 \quad \text { where } \sigma_{2}=r_{2} / a_{22} \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 5.3. Consider case (a) described in (5.9). If $0<\alpha, \kappa, K<\infty$ are chosen appropriately, and $y^{+2}$ denotes the square of the positive part of $y$ then

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}+\kappa u_{2}+K\left(u_{1}-\alpha\right)^{+2}
$$

is a convex Lyapunov function. In the degenerate case $\sigma_{1}=0$, we can take

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}+\kappa u_{2}+K\left(u_{1}-\alpha\right)^{+2}
$$



Figure 5.4.
Remark. In order to use these functions with the results in Proposition 4.2 and 4.3. we need bounds on the derivatives. In the first case the boundary equilibirum is ( $\sigma_{1}, 0$ ), so the desired bounds (which are satisfied here) are

$$
\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{1}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u_{1}} \quad\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{2}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u_{1}+u_{2}}
$$

for $u \in \Gamma_{+}$and $\partial h / \partial u_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{u \in \Gamma_{+}: u_{1} \geq \epsilon\right\}$. In the second case the boundary equilibirum is $(0,0)$, so the desired bounds from (d) and (e) of Proposition 4.3 (which are satisfied here) are $\left|\partial h / \partial u_{i}\right| \leq C_{d}$ for $u \in \Gamma_{+}$and $\partial h / \partial u_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\Gamma_{+}$.

Proof. It is clear that $h$ is convex. Letting $h_{1}=u_{1}-\sigma_{1} \log u_{1}$ and $h_{2}=u_{2}$, (5.7) implies that $d h / d t=d h_{1} / d t+\kappa d h_{2} / d t$ where

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d h_{1}}{d t} & =\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right)\left\{r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}-a_{12} u_{2}\right\}  \tag{5.11}\\
\frac{d h_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}-a_{22} u_{2}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

Now $d h_{2} / d t<0$ when $a_{22} u_{2}>r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}$ i.e., above the line $d u_{2} / d t=$ 0 , which now has positive slope and by (5.9) crosses the $x$-axis at $r_{2} / a_{21}>\sigma_{1}$. On the other hand, using $r_{1}=a_{11} \sigma_{1}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h_{1}}{d t}=-a_{11}\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right)^{2}-\left(u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right) a_{12} u_{2} \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this form we can see that $d h_{1} / d t<0$ if $u_{1}>\sigma_{1}$. Using (5.11), we see that $d h_{1} / d t<0$ if $u_{1}<\sigma_{1}$ and $r_{1}>v_{1}$. Combining the two results gives us four regions to look at. See Figure 5.4. Here, and in what follows, all points we consider are assumed to lie in $\Gamma$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R_{1} . r_{1}>v_{1}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t<0 \\
& R_{2} . u_{1} \leq \sigma_{1}, v_{1} \geq r_{1}: d h_{1} / d t \geq 0, d h_{2} / d t<0 \\
& R_{3} . a_{22} u_{2}>r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}, u_{1}>\sigma_{1}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t<0 \\
& R_{4} . a_{22} u_{2} \leq r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}: d h_{1} / d t<0, d h_{2} / d t \geq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that the regions have been numbered in parallel to those in Lemma 5.3. In $R_{1}$ and $R_{3}$ we have $d h / d t<0$. To deal with $R_{2}$, we will choose $\kappa$ large. To see that this will succeed despite the fact that $d h_{2} / d t$ vanishes when $u_{2}=0$, note that (i) the only point on the boundary of $R_{3}$ with $u_{2}=0$ is ( $\sigma_{1}, 0$ ), and (ii) if we near that point inside $R_{2}$ we have $\left|u_{1}-\sigma_{1}\right| \leq C u_{2}$, so $d h_{1} / d t=O\left(u_{2}^{2}\right)$ versus $d h_{2} / d t \sim c u_{2}$.

To control the behavior in $R_{4}$, we will add a corner function. Pick $\alpha \in\left(\sigma_{1}, r_{2} / a_{21}\right)$ and let $h_{3}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\left(u_{1}-\alpha\right)^{+}$. Calculus tells us that when $u_{1}>\alpha$

$$
\frac{d h_{3}}{d t}=\frac{d u_{1}}{d t}<0
$$

since $\alpha>\sigma_{1}$. Our other choice $\alpha<r_{2} / a_{21}$ implies that $d h_{3} / d t$ is bounded away from 0 on $R_{4}$. Since $d h_{2} / d t$ is bounded there, if $K$ is chosen large enough, $h_{1}+\kappa h_{2}+K h_{3}$ is a Lyapunov function.

This proves the result when $\sigma_{1}>0$. If $\sigma_{1}=0$ (i.e., $r_{1}=0$ ) there are only regions $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$. Changing now to $h_{1}\left(u_{1}\right)=u_{1}$ we still have $d h_{1} / d t<0$ in $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$. To control the behavior in $R_{1}$, we add the corner function $h_{3}$ as before.

We now consider the case in which $r_{2}>0$ and the boundary equilibrium is $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$ cannot be invaded by 1 's.

Lemma 5.4. Consider case (b) described in (5.10). If $0<\alpha, \kappa, K<$ $\infty$ are chosen appropriately, and we let $y^{+2}$ indicate the square of the positive part of $y$ then

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{2}-\sigma_{2} \log u_{2}+\kappa u_{1}+K\left(\alpha-u_{2}\right)^{+2}
$$

is a convex Lyapunov function. In the degenerate case $\sigma_{1}=0$ we can take

$$
h\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{2}-\sigma_{2} \log u_{2}+\kappa u_{1}
$$

Remark. In order to use these functions with the results in Proposition 4.2 we need bounds on the derivatives. In each case the boundary equilibirum is $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$, so interchanging the roles of the coordinates the desired bounds (which are satisfied here) are

$$
\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{2}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u_{2}} \quad\left|\frac{\partial h}{\partial u_{1}}\right| \leq \frac{C_{d}}{u_{1}+u_{2}}
$$

for $u \in \Gamma_{+}$and $\partial h / \partial u_{i}$ is Lipschitz continuous on $\left\{u \in \Gamma_{+}: u_{1} \geq \epsilon\right\}$.


Figure 5.5.
Proof. As you can see by comparing the conclusions with those of the two previous lemmas, this proof is very similar to the proof of Lemma 5.2, but now the fixed point is on the other axis. It is clear that $h$ is convex. Letting $h_{2}=u_{2}-\sigma_{2} \log u_{2}$ and $h_{1}=u_{1}$, (5.7) implies that $d h / d t=d h_{2} / d t+\kappa d h_{1} / d t$ where

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d h_{2}}{d t} & =\left(u_{2}-\sigma_{2}\right)\left\{r_{2}-a_{21} u_{1}-a_{22} u_{2}\right\}  \tag{5.13}\\
\frac{d h_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}-a_{12} u_{2}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

Now $d h_{1} / d t<0$ when $a_{12} u_{2}>r_{1}-a_{11} u_{1}$ i.e., above the line $d u_{1} / d t=$ 0 . On the other hand, using $r_{2}=a_{22} \sigma_{2}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h_{2}}{d t}=-a_{22}\left(u_{2}-\sigma_{2}\right)^{2}-\left(u_{2}-\sigma_{2}\right) a_{21} u_{1} \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this form we can see that $d h_{2} / d t<0$ if $u_{2}<\sigma_{2}$. Using (5.13), we see that $d h_{2} / d t<0$ if $u_{2}>\sigma_{2}$ and $r_{2}<v_{2}$. Combining the two results gives us four regions to look at. See Figure 5.5. Here, and in what follows, all points we consider are assumed to lie in $\Gamma$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R_{1} . r_{2}<v_{2}: d h_{2} / d t<0, d h_{1} / d t \leq 0 \\
& R_{2} . r_{2} \leq v_{2}, u_{2} \geq \sigma_{2}: d h_{2} / d t \geq 0, d h_{1} / d t<0 \\
& R_{3} . u_{2}<\sigma_{1}, v_{1} \geq r_{1}: d h_{2} / d t<0, d h_{1} / d t \leq 0 \\
& R_{4} . r_{1}>v_{1}: d h_{2} / d t<0, d h_{1} / d t \geq 0
\end{aligned}
$$

The numbering of the regions parallels that in Lemmas 5.3 and 5.4. In regions $R_{1}$ and $R_{3}$ we have $d h / d t<0$. To deal with $R_{2}$, we will choose $\kappa$ large. To see that this will succeed despite the fact that $d h_{1} / d t$ vanishes when $u_{1}=0$, note that (i) the only point on the boundary of $R_{3}$ with $u_{1}=0$ is $\left(0, \sigma_{2}\right)$, and (ii) if we near that point inside $R_{2}$ we have $\left|u_{2}-\sigma_{2}\right| \leq C u_{1}$, so $d h_{2} / d t=O\left(u_{1}^{2}\right)$ versus $d h_{1} / d t \sim c u_{1}$.

When $\sigma_{1}=0, R_{4}=\emptyset$ and we are done with the proof. To control the behavior in $R_{4}$ when $\sigma_{1}>0$, we will add a corner function. Pick $\alpha \in\left(\sigma_{2}, r_{1} / a_{12}\right)$ and let $h_{3}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=\left(\alpha-u_{2}\right)^{+}$. Calculus tells us that when $u_{1}>\alpha d h_{3} / d t=d u_{1} / d t<0$ since $\alpha>\sigma_{1}$. Our other choice $\alpha<r_{2} / a_{21}$ implies that $d h_{3} / d t$ is bounded away from 0 on $R_{4}$. Since $d h_{2} / d t$ is bounded there, if $K$ is chosen large enough, $h_{1}+\kappa h_{2}+K h_{3}$ is a Lyapunov function.

The final degenerate case to consider is when the origin is an attracting fixed point. The exploiter victim special case is covered by Lemma 5.3. This leaves us with only the competition case where the result is trivial.

Lemma 5.5. Suppose $r_{i}<0$ and $a_{i j}>0$. In this case $u_{1}+u_{2}$ is a convex Lyapunov function.

Proof. Clearly $d\left(u_{1}+u_{2}\right) / d t=\sum_{i} u_{i}\left(r_{i}-\sum_{j} a_{i j} u_{j}\right)<0$ when $u_{i} \geq 0$, $u_{1}+u_{2}>0$.
6. Three species linear competition models. In this section, we will consider the following generalization of Example 2.1 to three species. Each site can be in state $0,1,2$, or 3 , where 0 is vacant, while $i=1,2,3$ indicate sites occupied by type $i$. Letting $f_{i}$ be the fraction of neighbors in state $i$, we can write the transition rates of the model as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
i \rightarrow j & \text { at rate } \beta_{i j} f_{j} \\
j \rightarrow 0 & \text { at rate } \\
\delta_{j}+\sum_{k} \gamma_{j k} f_{k}
\end{array}
$$

The mean field ODE for this system is:

$$
\frac{d u_{j}}{d t}=\sum_{i}\left(\beta_{i j}-\beta_{j i}\right) u_{i} u_{j}-u_{j}\left(\delta_{j}+\sum_{k} \gamma_{j k} u_{k}\right)
$$

Letting $\beta_{j}=\beta_{0 j}$, noting $\beta_{j 0}=0$, and substituting $u_{0}=1-u_{1}-u_{2}-$ $u_{3}$, the equations above can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{j}}{d t}=\left(\beta_{j}-\delta_{j}\right) u_{j}-u_{j} \sum_{k=1}^{3}\left(\beta_{j}+\gamma_{j k}+\beta_{j k}-\beta_{k j}\right) u_{k} \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which has the Lotka-Volterra form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{j}}{d t}=u_{j}\left(r_{j}-\sum_{k} a_{j k} u_{k}\right) \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from the definition of the $a_{j k}$ and our generic parameters assumption that (i) $a_{j j}=\beta_{j}+\gamma_{j j}>0$ and (ii) if $a_{j k}<0 \beta_{k j}>\beta_{j k}$ and hence $a_{k j}>0$.

We begin with the special case in which each species can survive on its own. That is, we will suppose that

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{i}=\beta_{i}-\delta_{i}>0 \quad \text { for } i=1,2,3 \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

conditions that we can write in invadability notation as $i \succ 0$ using Definition 4. If we let

$$
\sigma_{i}=\frac{\beta_{i}-\delta_{i}}{\beta_{i}+\gamma_{i i}}
$$

and define the two indices $j<k$ complementary to $i$ by the requirement $\{1,2,3\}=\{i, j, k\}$ then the point $u_{i}=\sigma_{i}, u_{j}=u_{k}=0$ is an attracting fixed point on the edge $\Gamma_{j, k}^{0}=\left\{u: u_{j}=u_{k}=0\right\}$. In the
notation of Definition 2 we have $i \rightarrow \sigma_{i}$. From Definition 3, we see that $i$ can invade $j$ in equilibrium, or $i \succ j$, if

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{i}-a_{i j} \sigma_{j}>0 \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since we have supposed that $r_{i}>0$, this will always hold when $a_{i j}<$ 0 . Results in Example 1.1 imply that if $i \succ j$ and $j \succ i$ and $k=$ $\{1,2,3\}-\{i, j\}$ then there is a fixed point $u_{i}=\sigma_{i}^{k}, u_{j}=\sigma_{j}^{k}, u_{k}=0$. To treat this fixed point we need
(6.5) Definition 6. We say that $k$ can invade $i, j$ in equilibrium and write $k \succ i, j$ if as $u \rightarrow \sigma^{k}$ inside $\Gamma_{+}$

$$
\lim \inf \frac{1}{u_{k}} \frac{d u_{k}}{d t}>0
$$

In the current situation it is easy to see that this holds if

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{k}-a_{k i} \sigma_{i}^{k}-a_{k j} \sigma_{j}^{k}>0 \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The simplest possible situation occurs when all of the invadability conditions hold.

Theorem 6.1. Suppose that for all distinct $i, j, k$ we have (a) $i \succ 0$, (b) $i \succ j$, and (c) $k \succ i, j$. Then there is coexistence in the three species linear competition model with fast stirring.


Figure 6.1.

Proof. See Figure 6.1 for a picture. Since $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0$, and $3 \succ 0$ we can pick positive $\eta_{0}$ and $\nu_{0}$, so that $h_{0}=\log ^{-}\left(\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right) / 4 \eta_{0}\right)$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{0} / d t \leq-\nu_{0} \quad \text { when } 0 \leq\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right)<4 \eta_{0} \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the corner we move to the
Edges $\Gamma_{j, k}^{0}$. Let $\sigma_{i}=r_{i} / a_{i i}$ be the equilibrium density of type $i$ in the absence of competitors, and let $g_{i}(u)=u-\sigma_{i} \log u$. Each $\sigma_{i}$ is an attracting fixed point, so (a) of Proposition 1.1 is satisfied. Let $z_{i}=u_{j}+u_{k}$ where $j<k$ are the elements of $\{1,2,3\}-\{i\}$. Since $j \succ i$ and $k \succ i$, (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1, with $\epsilon_{i} \leq \eta_{0}$, we see that if $\theta_{i} \leq 1, \lambda_{i}, \eta_{i} \leq \eta_{i-1}, \nu_{i} \leq \nu_{i-1}$, and $B_{i}$ are chosen appropriately for $i=1,2,3$ and $\psi_{i}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{i}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{i}(u)=g_{i}\left(u_{i}+\theta_{i} \psi_{i}\left(u_{i}\right) z_{i}\right)-\lambda_{i} \log z_{i}
$$

has (i) $d h_{i} / d t \leq-\nu_{i}$ when $u_{i} \geq \epsilon_{i}$ and $0<z_{i} \leq \eta_{i}$ and (ii) $d h_{i} / d t \leq B_{i}$ when $0 \leq u_{i} \leq \epsilon_{i}$ and $0<z_{i} \leq \eta_{i}$. If we pick $M_{i}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{i}=h_{i} \wedge M_{i}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{i} \leq \eta_{i}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ small enough then we will have $h_{i}>M_{i}$ when $0<z_{i} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.7), so if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{3} \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<z_{i} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$ for some $1 \leq i \leq 3$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+$ $\bar{h}_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}$ is a repelling function for $Y=\Gamma_{2,3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. We can now add the Lyapunov functions for the

Faces $\Gamma_{i}^{0}$. Here we have competitive systems that fall into Case 2 of Section 5, so Lemma 5.1 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{i}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The condition $i \succ j, k$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{3+i} \leq 1, \lambda_{3+i}, \eta_{3+i} \leq \eta_{2+i}, \nu_{3+i} \leq \nu_{2+i}$, and $B_{3+i}$ are chosen appropriately for $i=1,2,3$ then

$$
h_{3+i}(u)=f_{i}\left(u_{j}+\theta_{3+i} u_{i}, u_{k}+\theta_{3+i} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3+i} \log z_{i}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3+i} / d t \leq-\nu_{3+i}$ when $u_{j} \wedge u_{k} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{i} \leq \eta_{3+i}$ and (ii) $d h_{3+i} / d t \leq B_{3+i}$ when $0 \leq u_{j} \wedge u_{k} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{i} \leq \eta_{3+i}$. If we
pick $M_{3+i}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3+i}=h_{3+i} \wedge M_{3+i}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{i} \leq \eta_{3+i}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.8). Thus if we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then $K_{2} j_{1}+h_{4}+h_{5}+h_{6}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 6.1 is complete.

Concrete Example. To show that it is possible to satisfy all of the conditions in Theorem 2.1, we consider the following numerical example:

$$
\begin{aligned}
d u_{1} / d t & =u_{1}\left\{1-8 u_{1}-2 u_{2}-2 u_{3}\right\} \\
d u_{2} / d t & =u_{2}\left\{1-2 u_{1}-8 u_{2}-2 u_{3}\right\} \\
d u_{3} / d t & =u_{3}\left\{1-2 u_{1}-2 u_{2}-8 u_{3}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

which corresponds to the system with $\beta_{i}=2, \delta_{i}=1, \gamma_{i i}=6$, the other $\gamma_{i j}$ and $\beta_{i j}$ are equal to 0 . In this case, $\sigma_{i}=1 / 8$ so $r_{i}-a_{i j} \sigma_{j}=3 / 4>0$ and $i \succ j$. When $u_{k}=0$ the boundary equilibrium, is $\sigma_{i}^{k}=\sigma_{j}^{k}=$ $1 / 10$. To check $k \succ i, j$, we note that $r_{k}-a_{k i} \sigma_{i}^{k}-a_{k j} \sigma_{j}^{k}=1-4 / 10>0$

It is natural to ask if all three species can coexist when some pair cannot. There are six invadability conditions in (b) of Theorem 2.1. We will break things down according to the number of these conditions that fail, starting with the situation in which there is only one. The reader who tires of the large number of cases can skip ahead to Section 7 where we consider three-species predator-prey examples.

ONE. Without loss of generality we can suppose that $3 \nsucc 2$. In this case Lemma 5.2 implies that $2 \gg 3$ where
(6.9) Definition 7. $2 \gg 3$ means there is a convex Lyapunov function on the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ that is decreasing whenever $u_{2}>0$.

Note that in general (a) $2 \gg 3$ is stronger than the pair of conditions (b) $2 \succ 3$ and $3 \nsucc 2$, however, our calculations in Section 5 show that for Lotka-Volterra systems (a) and (b) are equivalent.

Theorem 6.2. Suppose that (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0,3 \succ 0$,
(b) $2 \succ 1,1 \succ 2,3 \succ 1,1 \succ 3,2 \gg 3$
(c) $3 \succ 1,2$, and $2 \succ 1,3$.

Then there is coexistence in the three species linear competition model with fast stirring.


Figure 6.2
Proof. Again we start at the corner and work our way out. See Figure 6.2. The structure of the proof is dictated by our greedy algorithm: at each step we extend the domain of our repelling function by as much as possible. Schematically the proof is

$$
\{(0,0,0)\} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2,3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,2}^{0} \rightarrow \Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2}^{0} \rightarrow \Gamma^{0}
$$

Since $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0$, and $3 \succ 0$ we can pick positive $\eta_{0}$ and $\nu_{0}$, so that $h_{0}=\log ^{-}\left(\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right) / 4 \eta_{0}\right)$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{0} / d t \leq-\nu_{0} \quad \text { when } 0 \leq\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right)<4 \eta_{0} \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the corner we move to the
Edges $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. We must leave out $\Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$ since $3 \nsucc 2$. Let $\sigma_{i}=r_{i} / a_{i i}$ be the equilibrium density of type $i$ in the absence of competitors, and let $g_{i}(u)=u-\sigma_{i} \log u$. Each $\sigma_{i}$ is an attracting fixed point, so (a) of Proposition 1.1 is satisfied. Let $z_{i}=u_{j}+u_{k}$ where $j<k$ are the elements of $\{1,2,3\}-\{i\}$. When $i=1$ and $i=3$
(but not when $i=2$ ), we have $j \succ i$ and $k \succ i$, so (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1, with $\epsilon_{1} \leq \eta_{0}$, we see that if $\theta_{1} \leq 1, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1} \leq \epsilon$, $\nu_{1} \leq \nu_{0}$, and $B_{1}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{1}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{1}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{1}(u)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{1} \psi_{1}\left(u_{1}\right) z_{1}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log z_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{i}$ and (ii) $d h_{1} / d t \leq$ $B_{1}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$.

Applying Proposition 1.1 again, with $\epsilon_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{2}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{2}(u)=g_{3}\left(u_{3}+\theta_{2} \psi_{2}\left(u_{3}\right) z_{3}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log z_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}$ when $u_{3} \geq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{3} \leq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem in either case because of (6.10), so if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<z_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$ or $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. We are now ready to add

Faces $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$, the fixed point has both components positive, so Lemma 5.1 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{2}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The condition $2 \succ 1,3$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \eta_{2}, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{3}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{3} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.11). If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ then we will have $h_{3}>M_{3}$ when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$.

On the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$, the fixed point has $\sigma_{2}^{1}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{1}=0$, so Lemma 5.2 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $1 \succ 2$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.2, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{4} \leq 1$, $\lambda_{4}, \eta_{4} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{4} \leq \nu_{3}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{4}(u)=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{4} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{4} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq$ $B_{4}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.11). If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=$ $h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{4}<\eta_{4}$ then we will have $h_{4}>M_{4}$ when $0<u_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{4}$. If we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}+\bar{h}_{4}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{4} \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{4}$ or $0<u_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{4}$. In words, $j_{2}=K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}+\bar{h}_{4}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{2}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1}^{0}$. We are now ready to finish with the

Face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. Here, the fixed point has both components positive, so Lemma 5.1 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{3}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The condition $3 \succ 1,2$ implies that (b) holds. Applying the Proposition 4.1, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{4}$, we see that if $\theta_{5} \leq 1, \lambda_{5}, \eta_{5} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{5} \leq \nu_{4}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{5}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{5} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{5} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{5} \log u_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{5} / d t \leq-\nu_{5}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{5}$ and (ii) $d h_{5} / d t \leq B_{5}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{5}$. If we pick $M_{5}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{5}=h_{5} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{5}$. It follows from (6.12) that if we pick $K_{3} \geq 1$ large then $K_{3} j_{2}+h_{5}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 6.2 is complete.

Remark. Mimura and Fife (1986) considered a three species LotkaVolterra system satisfying the conditions of Theorem 6.2 and showed that if the diffusion rates for the 2 's and 3 's are small then the reactiondiffusion equation has non-constant equilibrium state.

Tilman's (1994) Model. To illustrate that the situation in Theorem 6.2 can occur we will consider a special case of (6.1) that

[^1]is of considerable interest in its own right. We set $\beta_{i j}=\beta_{j}$ if $i<j$, $\beta_{i j}=0$ otherwise, and for simplicity take $\gamma_{i j}=0$. The mean field ODE for the three species system is
\[

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=\beta_{1} u_{1}\left(1-u_{1}\right)-\delta_{1} u_{1} \\
& \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=\beta_{2} u_{2}\left(1-u_{1}-u_{2}\right)-\delta_{2} u_{2}-u_{2} \beta_{1} u_{1} \\
& \frac{d u_{3}}{d t}=\beta_{3} u_{3}\left(1-u_{1}-u_{2}-u_{3}\right)-\delta_{3} u_{3}-u_{3}\left(\beta_{1} u_{1}+\beta_{2} u_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$
\]

which has the Lotka-Volterra form with a lower-triangular matrix $a_{i j}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\beta_{1} u_{1}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{2}\right\}  \tag{6.13}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{\left(\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) u_{1}-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{3}\right) u_{2}-\beta_{3} u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

It is clear that $1 \succ 0$ (and $1 \succ 2$ and $1 \succ 3$ ) if $\beta_{1}>\delta_{1}$. Letting $\sigma_{i}=\left(\beta_{i}-\delta_{i}\right) / \beta_{i}$ we will have $2 \succ 1$ if

$$
\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \sigma_{1}>0
$$

and in this case there will be an equilibrium with

$$
\sigma_{1}^{3}=\sigma_{1} \quad \sigma_{2}^{3}=\frac{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \sigma_{1}}{\beta_{2}}
$$

We will have $3 \succ 1,2$ if $\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{1}^{3}-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{2}^{3}>0$. In contrast we have $3 \succ 2$ if

$$
\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{2}>0
$$

To give a numerical example we set $\beta_{i}=1$ for all $i$. In this case $\sigma_{i}=1-\delta_{i}$ and $\sigma_{2}^{3}=\sigma_{2}-2 \sigma_{1}$ so the invadability conditions are

$$
\begin{array}{rll}
1 \succ 0 & & \sigma_{1}>0 \\
2 \succ 1 & & \sigma_{2}>2 \sigma_{1} \\
3 \succ 1,2 & & \sigma_{3}>2 \sigma_{1}+2\left(\sigma_{2}-2 \sigma_{1}\right)=2\left(\sigma_{2}-\sigma_{1}\right) \\
3 \succ 2 & & \sigma_{3}>2 \sigma_{2}
\end{array}
$$

It should be clear from this that in the special case $\beta_{i} \equiv 1,3 \succ 2$ implies $3 \succ 1,2$ but not conversely. To better understand the invadability conditions $2 \succ 1$ and $3 \succ 1,2$, we consider $\delta_{3}<\delta_{2}<\delta_{1}$ as points in $(0,1)$ and rewrite the two desired conditions as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{2}<\delta_{1}-\sigma_{1} \quad \delta_{3}<\delta_{2}-\left(\sigma_{2}-2 \sigma_{1}\right) \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

In words, species 1 casts a shadow of length equal to its frequency in equilibrium $\rho_{1}=\sigma_{1}$, where species 2 is not allowed to fall. Similarly, species 2 casts a shadow of length equal to its frequency in equilibrium $\rho_{2}=\sigma_{2}-2 \sigma_{1}$ where species 3 is not allowed to fall. This observation leads to a simple algorithm for computing the equilibrium. Start with your pen at $(1,0)$. Go to the left and up at a 45 degree angle until you reach the first species at $\delta_{1}$. The height on the $y$ axis (in this case $1-\delta_{1}$ ) is its equilibrium density. Continue to the left but now down at a 45 degree angle until you hit $x$ axis. Any species passed over in the phase will have density 0 in equilibrium. Now go up at a 45 degree angle until you hit the next species and repeat the procedure. For more about this procedure, and properties that can be derived from it see May and Nowak (1994). Having determined the conditions for a positive equilibrium to exist, the rest is easy.

Theorem 6.3. Consider the $n$ species Tilman model. If there is a fixed point with all components positive then coexistence of all species occurs for fast stirring.

Sketch of Proof. A convergence theorem for the mean field ODE for the Tilman model is trivial. Clearly, $u_{1}(t) \rightarrow \rho_{1}$. Once $u_{1}$ is close to $\rho_{1}, d u_{2} / d t$ is almost a function of $u_{2}$ alone and has an attracting fixed point at $\rho_{2}$, so $u_{2}(t) \rightarrow \rho_{2}$, etc. One way of proving the second conclusion is to let $g_{i}(u)=u-\rho_{i} \log u$ and to introduce the convex function $\left[g_{2}(u)-g_{2}\left(\rho_{2}\right)-\epsilon_{2}\right]^{+}$which is decreasing along solutions when $u_{1}(t)$ is close enough to $\rho_{1}$. Using Proposition 1 on this function we can show that on a linearly growing set $u_{2}(t, x)$ is close to $\rho_{2}$. This observation and induction allows us to check the assumption ( $\star$ ) in Proposition 2 and the desired result follows. Details are given in Section 8.

TWO. Suppose now that two of the invadability conditions fail. There are several cases to consider. If we have $i \nsucc j$ and $j \nsucc i$ then we have two locally attracting equilibria on $\Gamma_{k}^{0}$ (where $k$ is the remaining index $\neq i, j)$ and our methods cannot work. Thus we can assume
without loss of generality the index 1 appears in each of the failed conditions while 2 and 3 appear once. This gives us three possibilities:
(i) $1 \gg 2,1 \gg 3$. In this case the boundary equilibrium $\left(\sigma_{1}, 0,0\right)$ is locally attracting so our methods fail and we expect the 1's to take over.
(ii) $2 \gg 1,1 \gg 3$. We will now show that coexistence is possible in this case.

Theorem 6.4. Suppose that (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0,3 \succ 0$,
(b) $2 \gg 1,1 \gg 3,3 \succ 2,2 \succ 3$, and (c) $1 \succ 2,3$.

Then there is coexistence in the three species linear competition model with fast stirring.


Figure 6.3

Proof of Theorem 6.4. We begin in the corner and work our way out. See Figure 6.3. The schematic of the proof is

$$
\{(0,0,0)\} \rightarrow \Gamma_{1,2}^{0} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2}^{0} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{3}^{0} \rightarrow \Gamma^{0}
$$

As in the two previous cases, since $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0$ and $3 \succ 0$, we can pick positive $\eta_{0}$ and $\nu_{0}$, so that $h_{0}=\log ^{-}\left(\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right) / 4 \eta_{0}\right)$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{0} / d t \leq-\nu_{0} \quad \text { when } 0 \leq\left(u_{1}+u_{2}+u_{3}\right)<4 \eta_{0} \tag{6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Edge $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. This time there is only one edge with a nonsaddle point so we start with it. Let $\sigma_{i}=r_{i} / a_{i i}$ be the equilibrium density of type $i$ in the absence of competitors, and let $g_{i}(u)=u-\sigma_{i} \log u$. Each $\sigma_{i}$ is an attracting fixed point, so (a) of Proposition 1.1 is satisfied. Let $z_{i}=u_{j}+u_{k}$ where $j<k$ are the elements of $\{1,2,3\}-\{i\}$. When $i=3$ (but not when $i=1$ or $i=2$ ), we have $j \succ i$ and $k \succ i$, so (b) holds. Applying Proposition 3.1, with $\epsilon_{1} \leq \eta_{0}$, we see that if $\theta_{1} \leq 1, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}, \nu_{1} \leq \nu_{0}$, and $B_{1}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{1}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{1}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{1}(u)=g_{1}\left(u_{3}+\theta_{1} \psi_{1}\left(u_{3}\right) z_{3}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{i}$ and (ii) $d h_{1} / d t \leq$ $B_{1}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{1}$ and $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.15), so if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{1} \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} h_{0}+\bar{h}_{1}$ is a repelling function for the edge $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. We are now ready to add the

Face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Here the boundary fixed point has $\sigma_{1}^{2}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{2}=0$, so Lemma 5.2 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $2 \succ 1$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.2, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{2}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{2} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{2} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$.

[^2]Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.16), so if we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. In words, $j_{2}=K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. We are now ready to add the

Face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. Here the boundary fixed point has $\sigma_{2}^{3}>0$ and $\sigma_{1}^{3}=0$, so Lemma 5.2 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{3}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $3 \succ 2$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.2, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{3}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{3} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}$ when $u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq$ $B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ then we will have $h_{3}>M_{3}$ when $0<u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (6.17), so if we pick $K_{3} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{3} j_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{3} \tag{6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$ or $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. In words, $j_{3}=K_{3} j_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}$ is a repelling function for two faces, $\Gamma_{3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2}^{0}$. We are now ready to add the final

Face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. Here, the fixed point has both components positive, so Lemma 5.1 implies the existence of a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The condition $1 \succ 2,3$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{4} \leq 1, \lambda_{4}, \eta_{4} \leq \eta_{3}, \nu_{4} \leq \nu_{3}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{4}(u)=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{4} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{4} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{2} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq B_{4}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$. If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{4}$. It follows from (6.17) that if we pick $K_{4} \geq 1$ large then
$K_{4} j_{3}+\bar{h}_{4}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 6.4 is complete.
(iii) $2 \gg 1,3 \gg 1$. One can easily generalize the proof of Theorem 6.4 to get a coexistence result. Unfortunately, the conditions in the resulting theorem are mutually contradictory! The conditions $2 \gg 1$ and $3 \gg 1$ imply that the fixed points $\left(0, \sigma_{2}, 0\right)$ and $\left(0,0, \sigma_{3}\right)$ are in $H_{1}^{-}=\left\{d u_{1} / d t<0\right\}$. If $2 \succ 3$ and $3 \succ 2$ then the fixed point $\left(0, \sigma_{2}^{1}, \sigma_{3}^{1}\right)$ will be above the line segment from $\left(0, \sigma_{2}, 0\right)$ to $\left(0,0, \sigma_{3}\right)$ and hence lie in $H_{1}^{-}=\left\{d u_{1} / d t<0\right\}$. Thus we cannot have $1 \succ 2,3$.

THREE. Finally, we have the case in which three of the invadability conditions fail. To avoid bistability on the faces exactly one of each pair $i \succ j, j \succ i$ must fail. Then to avoid one species dominating the other two we must have a cyclic relationship between competitors, which without loss of generality we can take to be $1 \ll 2 \ll 3 \ll 1$. Figure 6.4 shows that this case can happen. Unfortunately, each of the three fixed points on the edges is a saddle point, so we have no place to start our construction.

There is a good reason we cannot construct a Lyapunov function in general for this case. By results in Section 16.1 of Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) if we write the mean field ODE as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d u_{i}}{d t}=r_{i} u_{i}\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{3} c_{i j} u_{j}\right) \tag{6.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the case under consideration corresponds to

$$
c_{31}>c_{11}>c_{21} \quad c_{12}>c_{22}>c_{32} \quad c_{23}>c_{33}>c_{13}
$$

The three boundary fixed points and their saddle connections, orbits having one saddle as $\alpha$-limit set (time $\rightarrow-\infty$ ) and one as $\omega$-limit set (time $\rightarrow+\infty$ ), form what is called a heteroclinic cycle. If we let

$$
\alpha_{i}=\frac{c_{i-1, i}}{c_{i i}}>1>\frac{c_{i+1, i}}{c_{i i}}=\beta_{i}
$$

where the arithmetic in the subscript is done modulo 3 , then Theorem 16.1.1 in Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) implies that the heteroclinic cycle is an attractor if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(\alpha_{i}-1\right)>\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\beta_{i}\right) \tag{6.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

while the system is persistent if $\operatorname{det} C>0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(\alpha_{i}-1\right)<\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\beta_{i}\right) \tag{6.21}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 6.4
A concrete example of this situation occurs in Section 6 of Durrett and Levin (1998). They consider a competitive cycle in which $1 \gg$ $2 \gg 3 \gg 1$. In their model,
(a) Vacant sites become occupied by type $i$ at rate $f_{i}$
(b) Occupied sites $x$ at rate $\beta-1$ attack a randomly chosen neighbor $y$.
(c) If $y$ is occupied by the type which can be outcompeted by the one at $x$ the individual at $y$ is killed. It is replaced by the type at $x$ with probability $(1-\alpha) /(\beta-1)$

The rather strange choice of constants is motivated by the fact that if this is done then the mean field ODE will be an equation studied
by May and Leonard (1975).

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d N_{1}}{d t} & =N_{1}\left\{1-N_{1}-\alpha N_{2}-\beta N_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d N_{2}}{d t} & =N_{2}\left\{1-\beta N_{1}-N_{2}-\alpha N_{3}\right\}  \tag{6.22}\\
\frac{d N_{3}}{d t} & =N_{3}\left\{1-\alpha N_{1}-\beta N_{2}-N_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

When $\alpha+\beta>2$ and $\alpha<1$, orbits of the ODE spiral outward to the hetroclinic cycle. See Figure 6 on page 39 in Durrett and Levin (1998).
7. Three species predator-prey models. In this section we consider three species Lotka-Volterra systems in which $a_{i j}<0$ for some $i \neq j$.

Example 7.1. Two-prey, one-predator model. Following the set-up of Example 1 in the Introduction, we say that each site can be in a state $0=$ vacant, $i=1,2$ to indicate sites occupied by prey species $i$, or 3 to indicate a predator. Letting $f_{i}$ be the fraction of neighbors in state $i$, we can write the transition rates of the model as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
0 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2} \\
1 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{3} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{3}+\gamma f_{3} \\
2 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{4} f_{3} & &
\end{array}
$$

In words, individuals of species $i$ dies at rate $\delta_{i}$; those of type $i=1,2$ give birth at rate $\beta_{i}$, successfully colonizing only vacant squares. Last but not least, prey sites are taken over by predators at rates that depend upon the species being attacked.

Results of Neuhauser (1992) show that if $\delta_{1}=\delta_{2}$ and there is no predator then two species competing will in general lead to one type competitively excluding the other. In view of this, it is somewhat suprising that the presence of a predator can stabilize the competition of two prey species, leading to coexistence of all three species. One of the first experiments suggesting that this could occur was conducted by Paine (1966). He showed in a marine system that predator removal could lead to the extinction of previously coexisting species. Parrish and Saila (1970) conjectured and Cramer and May (1972) later proved the possibility of predator mediated coexistence in the ODE:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d N_{1}}{d t} & =N_{1}\left\{\epsilon_{1}-\alpha_{11} N_{1}-\alpha_{12} N_{2}-\alpha_{13} N_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d N_{2}}{d t} & =N_{2}\left\{\epsilon_{2}-\alpha_{21} N_{1}-\alpha_{22} N_{2}-\alpha_{23} N_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d N_{3}}{d t} & =N_{3}\left\{-\epsilon_{3}+\alpha_{31} N_{1}+\alpha_{32} N_{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Further work on the ODE, see Vance (1978), Fujii (1978), Hsu (1981), Huston and Vickers (1983), Takeuchi and Adachi (1983), has led to a complete understanding of when two-prey and a predator can permanently coexist, that is,

$$
\liminf _{t \rightarrow \infty} N_{i}(t) \geq \epsilon_{i}>0
$$

In a different direction, Caswell (1978) and Crowley (1979) considered metapopulation models, i.e., systems that consist of a large number of patches each of which is equally accessible to all the others. Mimura and Kan-on (1996) studied predator-mediated coexistence in reaction-diffusion equations and showed the existence of periodic and chaotic spatio-temporal structures in these models. Shah (1997) was the first to demonstrate predator-mediated coexistence could occur in a stochastic spatial model. In the terminology of this paper, he used a collection of repelling functions to confine the PDE in smaller and smaller regions of $\Gamma$, until he could conclude that the densities $u_{i}(t, x)$ in the PDE stay bounded away from 0 on a linearly growing set. Here, we show that his result can be proved with a single repelling function.

To begin our analysis, we note that the mean field ODE for this model is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-\delta_{1} u_{1}-\beta_{3} u_{1} u_{3} \\
& \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{0}-\delta_{2} u_{2}-\beta_{4} u_{2} u_{3} \\
& \frac{d u_{3}}{d t}=\beta_{3} u_{1} u_{3}+\beta_{4} u_{2} u_{3}-\delta_{3}\left(u_{3}+\gamma u_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which can be rearranged to give

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\beta_{1} u_{1}-\beta_{1} u_{2}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) u_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\beta_{2} u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{2}-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right) u_{3}\right\}  \tag{7.1.1}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{-\delta_{3}+\beta_{3} u_{1}+\beta_{4} u_{2}-\gamma u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

To begin to analyze this system, we start with the behavior of each species in the absence of the others. If we suppose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}>\delta_{1} \tag{7.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let $\sigma_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$ then on the edge $\Gamma_{23}^{0},\left(\sigma_{1}, 0,0\right)$ is an attracting fixed point. Similarly, if we suppose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2}>\delta_{2} \tag{7.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let $\sigma_{2}=\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right) / \beta_{2}$ then on the edge $\Gamma_{13}^{0},\left(0, \sigma_{2}, 0\right)$ is an attracting fixed point. To bring out the connection with the other conditions
we will write the assumptions (7.1.2) and (7.1.3) in invadability notation using Definition 4 as $1 \succ 0$ and $2 \succ 0$ respectively. In the absence of prey

$$
\begin{equation*}
d u_{3} / d t<0 \quad \text { on } \Gamma_{12}^{0} \tag{7.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

a condition that using Definition 1 we write as $3 \downarrow 0$.
On the face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ we have a competition between two species so if we assume

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1} / \delta_{1}>\beta_{2} / \delta_{2} \tag{7.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

then Lemma 5.2 implies there is a convex Lyapunov function which is decreasing whenever $u_{3}=0$ and $u_{1}>0$, a conclusion that we have defined in (6.9) as $1 \gg 2$. On the faces $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ the ODE is of the predator-prey type. From (7.1.3) we see that 1's and 3's can coexist if $3 \succ 1$ or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}}>\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}} \tag{7.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and using (2.1.4) that in this case there is an attracting fixed point on the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ with coordinates

$$
\sigma_{1}^{2}=\frac{\gamma\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \delta_{3}}{\beta_{1} \gamma+\beta_{3}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)} \quad \sigma_{3}^{2}=\frac{-\beta_{1} \delta_{3}+\beta_{3}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)}{\beta_{1} \gamma+\beta_{3}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)}
$$

Similarly, we conclude that 2's and 3 's can coexist if $3 \succ 2$ or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}}>\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{4}} \tag{7.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and in this case there is an attracting fixed point on the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ with coordinates

$$
\sigma_{2}^{1}=\frac{\gamma\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)+\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right) \delta_{3}}{\beta_{2} \gamma+\beta_{4}\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right)} \quad \sigma_{3}^{1}=\frac{-\beta_{2} \delta_{3}+\beta_{4}\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)}{\beta_{2} \gamma+\beta_{4}\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right)}
$$

From (7.1.1) we see that 2's can invade the 1,3 equilibrium (or $2 \succ 1,3)$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}-\beta_{2} \sigma_{1}^{2}-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right) \sigma_{3}^{2}>0 \tag{7.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

while 1 's can invade the 2,3 equilibrium (or $1 \succ 2,3$ ) if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}-\beta_{1} \sigma_{2}^{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{3}^{1}>0 \tag{7.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 7.1. Suppose that $(a) 1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0,0 \succ 3$,
(b) $1 \gg 2,3 \succ 1,3 \succ 2$, and (c) $2 \succ 1,3$ and $1 \succ 2,3$.

Then coexistence occurs in the two-prey, one-predator model with fast stirring.

Remark. To be precise, the assumptions of the theorem are that (7.1.2)-(7.1.9) hold.


Figure 7.1
Sketch of Proof. See Figure 7.1. This time we cannot begin with the corner function so we instead let $z_{3}=u_{1}+u_{2}$ and

$$
h_{1}=\max \left\{u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}, M_{1}\right\}
$$

Proposition 1.2 implies that if the parameters are chosen appropriately $h_{1}$ is a repelling function for the edge $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. There is no exceptional set since the fixed point is at 0 . The fixed point on $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$ is a saddle
point so we ignore it and use Proposition 1.1 to extend to $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ we have $\sigma_{1}^{3}>0, \sigma_{2}^{3}=0$, so using Proposition 4.2, we can extend to $\Gamma_{3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. This covers the problem regions for the other two faces, so two uses of Porposition 4.1, gives a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$.

Proof of Theorem 7.1. Following the outline just given, the first step is:

Edge $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. In the absence of prey, the predators die out, so (a) of Proposition 1.2 holds. Let $z_{3}=u_{1}+u_{2}$. Since $1,2 \succ 0$, (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.2, we see that if $\lambda_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $\eta_{1}$ are chosen appropriately then $h_{1}(u)=u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1} \quad \text { when } 0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1} \tag{7.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$.

Edge $\Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$. Let $\sigma_{2}=\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right) / \beta_{2}$ be the equilibrium density of type 2 in the absence of competitors, and let $g_{2}\left(u_{2}\right)=u_{2}-\sigma_{2} \log u_{2}$. Since $\sigma_{2}$ is an attracting fixed point, (a) of Proposition 1.1 is satisfied. Let $z_{2}=u_{1}+u_{3}$. Since $1 \succ 2$ and $3 \succ 2$, (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.1, with $\epsilon_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{2}(u)=g_{2}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{2} \psi_{2}\left(u_{2}\right) z_{2}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log z_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}$ when $u_{2} \geq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}$ and $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$, then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<z_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.1.10), so if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d\left(K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}\right)}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{7.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $0<z_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$ or $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for two edges $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,3}^{0}$. The arguments in this paragraph fail for the edge $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$, since $2 \nsucc 1$, so we turn now to the

Face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. Here the fixed point has $\sigma_{1}^{3}>0$ and $\sigma_{2}^{3}=0$, so Lemma 5.2 gives a Lyapunov function $f_{3}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $3 \succ 1$ implies that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.2, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{3}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{3} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq$ $B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ then we will have $h_{3}>M_{3}$ when $0<u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.1.11), so if we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{2} j_{1}+h_{3}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{3} \tag{7.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ or $z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. In words, $j_{2}=K_{2} j_{1}+h_{2}$ is a repelling function for a face and an edge: $\Gamma_{3}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. We are now ready to add the Lyapunov functions on the

Faces $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Here we have supercrtical predator-prey interactions, so Lemma 5.0 gives us Lyapunov functions $f_{1}$ and $f_{2}$ for these faces that satisfy (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The invadability conditions $2 \succ 1,3$ and $1 \succ 2,3$ imply that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1 now, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{4} \leq 1, \lambda_{4}, \eta_{4} \leq \epsilon$, $\nu_{4} \leq \nu_{3}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{4}(u)=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{4} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{4} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{1} \tag{7.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{2} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq B_{4}$ when $u_{2} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$. If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$. Another application of Proposition 4.1, gives a function

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{5}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{5} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{5} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{5} \log u_{2} \tag{7.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{5} / d t \leq-\nu_{5}$ when $u_{2} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{5} / d t \leq B_{5}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{5}$. If we pick $M_{5}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{5}=h_{5} \wedge M_{5}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{5}$. Combining (7.1.12)-(7.1.14), we see that if $K_{3}$ is chosen
large enough then $K_{3} j_{2}+\bar{h}_{4}+\bar{h}_{5}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 7.1 is complete.

Concrete Example. To get a feel for what the conditions in Theorem 7.1 mean and to demonstrate that they can all hold simultaneously, we will investigate what happens when we take $\gamma=0$ to simplify the formulas, fix $\delta_{1}=\delta_{2}=1$, assign values to $\delta_{3}$, and to $\beta_{3}<\beta_{4}$, then look at the behavior as a function of the birth rates $\beta_{1}$ and $\beta_{2}$. Letting $D=1-\delta_{3} / \beta_{4}, F=1-\delta_{3} / \beta_{3}$, we can write the conditions in (7.1.8) and (7.1.9) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)\left(F \beta_{2}-1\right)-\left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right)\left(F \beta_{1}-1\right)>0 \\
& \left(\beta_{2}+\beta_{4}\right)\left(D \beta_{1}-1\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)\left(D \beta_{2}-1\right)>0
\end{aligned}
$$

Expanding out and canceling $\pm F \beta_{1} \beta_{2}$ in the first line and $\pm D \beta_{1} \beta_{2}$ in the second we have two linear inequalities

$$
\begin{array}{r}
-\left(F \beta_{4}+1\right) \beta_{1}+\left(F \beta_{3}+1\right) \beta_{2}>\beta_{3}-\beta_{4} \\
\quad\left(D \beta_{4}+1\right) \beta_{1}-\left(D \beta_{3}+1\right) \beta_{2}>\beta_{4}-\beta_{3}
\end{array}
$$

Rearranging these equations leads to

$$
\begin{align*}
& \beta_{2}>\frac{\beta_{4} F+1}{\beta_{3} F+1} \cdot \beta_{1}+\frac{\beta_{3}-\beta_{4}}{\beta_{3} F+1}  \tag{7.1.15}\\
& \beta_{2}<\frac{\beta_{4} D+1}{\beta_{3} D+1} \cdot \beta_{1}+\frac{\beta_{3}-\beta_{4}}{\beta_{3} D+1}
\end{align*}
$$

At this point the reader may be wondering: How do these conditions compare to the existence of a fixed point with all coordinates positive? Some tedious algebra left as an exercise for the reader shows that yet again the invadability conditions in (7.1.15) are equivalent to the existence of a fixed point with all components positive. Half of this is a general result. Theorem 5.2.1 of Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) shows that for a Lotka-Volterra system, the interior of $\mathbf{R}_{n}^{+}$ contains $\alpha$ or $\omega$ limit points if and only if the system has an interior fixed point. The invadability condition gives a nontrivial $\omega$-limit set by Proposition 0 , so there must be a fixed point. We know of no general result in the other direction, but we have been able to check this equivalence algebraically in most of our examples.

The existence of an interior fixed point does not mean that it will be attracting. See Figure 7.2 for an example due to Gilpin (1975):
$r_{1}=r_{2}=1, r_{3}=-1$,

$$
a_{i j}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
.001 & .001 & .01 \\
.0015 & .001 & .001 \\
-.005 & -.0005 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

One does not have to be be this extreme with the matrix $a_{i j}$. According to Exercise 16.2.9 of Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998), we will also get chaos if we multiply $a_{i j}$ by 1000 (which is the same as suitably changing time and units of measurement of $u_{i}$ ) and then change $a_{33}$ to .01 (to be $100 \%$ sure that the 3 's remain bounded).


Figure 7.2
To have a numerical example to plug into (7.1.15) we set $\beta_{3}=3$, $\beta_{4}=2, \delta_{1}=\delta_{2}=\delta_{3}=1$, in which case $D=1-1 / 2=1 / 2$, $F=1-1 / 3=2 / 3$ and the equations say

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{7}{9} \beta_{1}+\frac{1}{3}<\beta_{2}<\frac{4}{5} \beta_{1}+\frac{2}{5} \tag{7.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Keeping in mind the fact that we have imposed the condition $\beta_{1}>\beta_{2}$ and noting that
(i) the lower bound in (7.1.16) is $\beta_{1}$ when $(2 / 9) \beta_{1}=1 / 3$ or $\beta_{1}=3 / 2$,
(ii) the upper bound in (7.1.16) is $\beta_{1}$ when $(1 / 5) \beta_{1}=2 / 5$ or $\beta_{2}=2$.
(iii) the upper bound has slope .8 versus the $.777 \ldots$ slope of the lower bound.
it follows that the region in (7.1.16) is an infinite three sided polygonal region, the interior of which we will call $\mathcal{C}$ for coexistence region. See Figure 7.3.

To apply Theorem 7.1 and conclude coexistence we must also have (7.1.6) and (7.1.7), which in the current notation would be written as

$$
\beta_{1}>1 / F=3 / 2, \quad \beta_{2}>1 / D=2
$$

It is interesting here that each of the corresponding constraint lines goes through one of the corners of the polygon $\mathcal{C}$. To prove that this always happens we note that taking $\beta_{1}=1 / F$ in the first equation of (7.1.15) gives a lower bound of $1 / F$ while taking $\beta_{2}=1 / D$ in the second gives an upper bound of $1 / D$.


Figure 7.3
When $\beta_{3}>\beta_{4}, 1 / F<1 / D$, so Theorem 7.1 applies only to the parameter values in $\mathcal{C} \cap\left\{\beta_{2}>1 / D\right\}$. When $\beta_{2} \leq 1 / D$, the second prey species is not nutritious enough to sustain the predator by itself but
this does not rule out the possibility of the three species coexisting. Based on the existence of a fixed point, one might conjecture that there is coexistence in $\mathcal{C} \cap\left\{\beta_{2} \leq 1 / D\right\}$. To do this when $\beta_{2}<1 / D$, we return to the general set-up at the beginning of the example and note that if $3 \succ 1$ and $2 \succ 1,3$ then the fixed point $\left(\sigma_{1}^{2}, 0, \sigma_{3}^{2}\right)$ exists and 2's can invade it. When $3 \succ 2$ fails the predator-prey system on the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ only has the boundary equilibrium

$$
\sigma_{2}^{2}=\frac{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}} \quad \sigma_{3}^{2}=0
$$

We have assumed that $\beta_{1} / \delta_{1}>\beta_{2} / \delta_{2}$ so in the plane $\Gamma_{0}^{3},\left(0, \sigma_{2}^{2}, 0\right)$ is unstable, i.e., 1 's can invade this degenerate 1,3 equilibrium. Combining the conditions and writing $3 \nsucc 2$ for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}}<\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{4}} \tag{7.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

we can state our result as
Theorem 7.2. Suppose (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0,0 \succ 3$,
(b) $1 \gg 2,3 \succ 1,3 \nsucc 2$ and (c) $2 \succ 1,3$.

Then with fast stirring there is coexistence in the two-prey, onepredator model.


Figure 7.4

Sketch of Proof. See Figure 7.4. As in the previous result, we let $z_{3}=u_{1}+u_{2}$ and

$$
h_{1}=\max \left\{u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}, M_{1}\right\}
$$

which is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{12}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ the fixed point has $\sigma_{2}^{2}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{2}=0$, so Proposition 4.2 allows us to extend to $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ the fixed point has $\sigma_{1}^{3}>0$ and $\sigma_{2}^{3}=0$, so another use of Proposition 4.2 extends to $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{3}^{0}$. This covers the problem region for the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$, so using Proposition 4.1 now gives a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$.

Proof of Theorem 7.2. The first step, as in the proof of Theorem 7.1, is the

Edge $\Gamma_{1,2}^{0}$. If $\lambda_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $\eta_{1}$ are chosen appropriately and $z_{3}=u_{1}+u_{2}$ then $h_{1}(u)=u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1} \quad \text { for } 0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1} \tag{7.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. Since $3 \nsucc 2$, the next step in the proof is different from that of Theorem 7.1. This time we next look to the face where the predators cannot invade.

Face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. On this face, the ODE is a subcritical predator-prey system with a fixed point that has $\sigma_{2}^{1}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{1}=0$, so Lemma 5.3 gives a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. Since $1 \succ 2$, (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.2 , with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{2}(u)=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{2} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{2} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}$ when $u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.1.18). Thus, if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d\left(K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}\right)}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{7.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \leq \epsilon$. In words $j_{1}=K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. We move on now to the

Face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. On this face, the fixed point has $\sigma_{1}^{3}>0$ and $\sigma_{2}^{3}=0$, so the ODE is in Case 3a of the linear competition model, and Lemma 5.2 gives a Lyapunov function $f_{3}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. Since $3 \succ 1$, $(\mathrm{b})$ holds. Applying Proposition 4.2, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{3}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{3} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ then we will have $h_{3}>M_{3}$ when $0<u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.1.19). Thus, if we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}}{d t} \leq-\nu_{3} \tag{7.1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \leq \eta_{3}$ or $u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. In words, $j_{2}=K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}$ is a repelling function for two faces: $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{3}^{0}$. It remains to cover the

Face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. The first step is to note that on this face, the ODE is a supercritcal predator-prey model, so Lemma 5.0 gives a Lyapunov function $f_{2}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. Since $2 \succ 1,3,(\mathrm{~b})$ holds. Applying Proposition 4.1, with $\epsilon \leq \eta_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{4} \leq 1, \lambda_{4}, \eta_{4} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{4} \leq \nu_{3}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
h_{4}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{4} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{4} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.1.20). If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$. Thus if we pick $K_{3} \geq 1$ large then $K_{3} j_{2}+\bar{h}_{4}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 7.2 is complete.

Example 7.2. Three species food chain. As the name might suggest, in this system $0=$ vacant, $1=$ prey, $2=$ a predator that feeds
on 1's, while $3=$ a predator that feeds on 2's. Using our traditional notation the rates may be written as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
1 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2}+\gamma_{2} f_{2} \\
2 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{3} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{3}+\gamma_{3} f_{3}
\end{array}
$$

One can write the mean field ODE for this model as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-\delta_{1} u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{1} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{1}-u_{2}\left(\delta_{2}+\gamma_{2} u_{2}\right)-\beta_{3} u_{2} u_{3} \\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =\beta_{3} u_{3} u_{2}-u_{3}\left(\delta_{3}+\gamma_{3} u_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and rearrange to write the system in Lotka-Volterra form:

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}-\beta_{1} u_{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) u_{2}-\beta_{1} u_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{-\delta_{2}+\beta_{2} u_{1}-\gamma_{2} u_{2}-\beta_{3} u_{3}\right\}  \tag{7.2.1}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{-\delta_{3} \quad+\beta_{3} u_{2}-\gamma_{3} u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

To begin to analyze this system, we note that all species will die out unless

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}>\delta_{1} \tag{7.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ the ODE is of the predator-prey type. From (2.1.7) we see that 1 's and 2 's can coexist if $2 \succ 1$ or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}}>\frac{\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}} \tag{7.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and using (2.1.4) that in this case there is an attracting fixed point on the face $\Gamma_{0}^{3}$ with coordinates

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{1}^{3}=\frac{\gamma_{2}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \delta_{2}}{\beta_{1} \gamma_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right)} \quad \sigma_{2}^{3}=\frac{-\beta_{1} \delta_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{2}\right)}{\beta_{1} \gamma_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right)} \tag{7.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The next step is to ask if the 3 's can invade the 1,2 equilibrium. This will occur if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{3} \sigma_{2}^{3}-\delta_{3}>0 \quad \text { or } \quad \sigma_{2}^{3}>\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}} \tag{7.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging (7.2.4) into (7.2.5), the condition becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{-\beta_{1} \delta_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)}{\beta_{1} \gamma_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right)}>\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}} \tag{7.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly this can hold only if $\beta_{1}>\delta_{1}$, which is (7.2.2), and if $\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}-\right.$ $\left.\delta_{1}\right)>\beta_{1} \delta_{2}$, which implies (7.2.3). Though in this case (7.2.6) implies the other two conditions, we will write all three in the theorem in their invadability form.

Theorem 7.3. Suppose (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \downarrow 0,3 \downarrow 0$, (b) $2 \succ 1$, and (c) $3 \succ 1,2$. Then with fast stirring, coexistence occurs in the three species food chain.

Remark. Here, $2 \downarrow 0$ and $3 \downarrow 0$ simply indicate that 2's and 3's are predators, while $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 1$, and $3 \succ 1,2$ are our three conditions (7.2.2), (7.2.3), (7.2.6).

Sketch of proof. On the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ the fixed point is at $(0,0)$, so by Proposition 4.3, there is no exceptional set and we have a repelling function for $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ the fixed point has $\sigma_{1}^{2}>0$ and $\sigma_{2}^{2}=0$, so Proposition 4.2 allows us to extend to $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2}^{0}$. This covers the problem region for the final extension, so Proposition 4.1 gives us a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$.


Figure 7.5

Proof of Theorem 7.3. Following the outline in the sketch, we begin with the

Face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. Here, we have a predator-prey system in which the prey die out, so Lemma 5.3 gives us a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ which satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.3. Since $1 \succ 0$, (b) holds. Using Proposition 4.3 now, we see that if constants $\theta_{1}, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $B_{1}$ are chosen correctly $h_{1}=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{1} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{1} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log u_{1}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}<0 \quad \text { when } 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{1} \tag{7.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

There is no exceptional set since the fixed point is at $(0,0)$. If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. We move now to the

Face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Here the ODE is a degenerate linear competition model with $\sigma_{1}^{2}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{2}=0$, so Lemma 5.2 gives us a Lyapunov function $f_{2}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $2 \succ 1$ implies that (b) holds. Using Proposition 4.2 now with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if constants $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen correctly

$$
h_{2}=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{2} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{2} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{2}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon, 0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon, 0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.2.7). Thus if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d\left(K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}\right)}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{7.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$ or $u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for two faces: $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2}^{0}$. We are now ready for the final

Face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. Here, the system is a supercritical predator-prey system, so Lemma 5.0 provides us with a Lyapunov function, $f_{3}$ which satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The condition $3 \succ 1,2$ implies that (b) holds. Using Proposition 4.1 now with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if constants $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen correctly

$$
h_{3}=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{3} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}<0$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \geq \epsilon, 0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \leq \epsilon, 0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.2.8). Thus if we pick $K_{2} \geq 1$ large then $K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}$ defines a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ completing the proof of Theorem 7.3.

Remark. It would be interesting to be able to analyze the three species food chain with type 2 predators since Hastings and Powell (1991) have shown that in this case the ODE can be chaotic. However to do this with our methods, we would need a convex Lyapunov function for each face.

Continuing our fascination with the relationship between invadability conditions and the existence of an interior fixed point we note that if $\rho_{3}=c$ then the third and second equations in (7.2.1) imply

$$
\rho_{2}=\frac{\gamma_{3} c+\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}} \quad \rho_{1}=\frac{1}{\beta_{2}}\left\{\gamma_{2} \rho_{2}+\beta_{3} c+\delta_{2}\right\}
$$

The $\rho_{i}$ increase with $c$, so we will have $\beta_{1} \rho_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \rho_{2}+\beta_{1} \rho_{3}=$ $\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}$ for some $c>0$ if and only if when we set $c=0$

$$
\beta_{1} \cdot \frac{1}{\beta_{2}}\left\{\gamma_{2} \frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}}+\delta_{2}\right\}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}}<\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}
$$

Multiplying each side by $\beta_{2}$ and rearranging this becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\beta_{1} \gamma_{2}+\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right)\right] \frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}}<-\beta_{1} \delta_{2}+\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) \beta_{2} \tag{7.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is clearly equivalent to to (7.2.6).
Remark. Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) have considered a closely related ODE:

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{q_{1}-b_{11} u_{1}-b_{12} u_{2}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{-q_{2}+b_{21} u_{1}-b_{22} u_{2}-b_{23} u_{3}\right\}  \tag{7.2.10}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{-q_{3}+b_{32} u_{2}-b_{33} u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have departed from our usual notation to have all the $q_{i}>0$ and $b_{i j}>0$. As the reader will see in a moment, the absence of the $-b_{13} u_{3}$ term makes life considerably easier. Theorem 5.3.1 in Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998) shows that, in contrast to the chaotic two-prey one-predator example,

Theorem 7.4. If (7.2.10) has an interior fixed point $\rho$ then $\rho$ is the limit from any starting point in $\Gamma^{+}$.

Proof. If we pick $c_{i}$ so that $c_{1} a_{12}=c_{2} a_{21}$ and $c_{2} a_{23}=c_{3} a_{32}$ then repeating the proof of Lemma 5.0 shows $\sum_{i} c_{i}\left(u_{i}-\rho_{i} \log u_{i}\right)$ is a convex Lyapunov function. We leave it to the reader to see if this reasoning can be extended to our case which has $a_{13} \neq 0$. See the proof of Lemma 5.1 for some tips about how to proceed.

Having considered predator-prey systems of types 1-2, and 1-11 , it is natural to also consider 2-1:

Example 7.3. Two-predator one-prey model. In this case we do not expect to be successful in getting coexistence. The exclusion principle states that if $n$ populations depend linearly on $m$ resources with $m<n$, then at least one of the populations will vanish. To be precise, we state
(7.3.1) Suppose that for $1 \leq i \leq n$

$$
\frac{1}{u_{i}} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}=-\alpha_{i}+\sum_{j=1}^{m} b_{i j} R_{j}\left(u_{1}, \ldots u_{n}\right)
$$

and the $u_{i}(t)$ stay bounded as $t \rightarrow \infty$. Then $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \inf _{i} u_{i}(t)=0$.
Proof. This result is given on pages 47-48 of Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998). Since the proof is short and closely related to our methods we give it. Since $n>m$ there is a nontrival vector $c$ so that $\sum_{i} c_{i} b_{i j}=0$ for all $j$. Let $h(u)=\sum_{i} c_{i} \log u_{i}$. Calculus shows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d h}{d t}=-\sum_{i} c_{i} \alpha_{i} \equiv-\alpha \tag{7.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will only consider the generic case in which $\alpha \neq 0$. In this case we can suppose that $\alpha>0$. Integrating (7.3.2) gives $h(u(t))=h(u(0))-$ $\alpha t$ so

$$
\prod_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}(t)^{c_{i}}=e^{h(u(0))} e^{-\alpha t} \rightarrow 0
$$

as $t \rightarrow \infty$. By assumption we cannot have $\lim \sup u_{i}(t)=\infty$ so this must be caused by the convergence of $\inf _{i} u_{i}(t) \rightarrow 0$.

Despite the bad news in (7.3.1), we will proceed to formulate our two-predator, one prey model. Part of the reason for our perseverance is that our results will show that changing the death term $-\alpha_{i}$ in (7.3.1) to $-\alpha_{i}-\gamma_{i} u_{i}$ will allow coexistence to occur in some cases. The states of our model are $0=$ vacant, $1=$ sites occupied by prey, $2,3=$ predators 1 and 2 . The transition rates of the model as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
1 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2}+\gamma_{22} f_{2}+\gamma_{23} f_{3} \\
1 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{3} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{3}+\gamma_{32} f_{2}+\gamma_{33} f_{3}
\end{array}
$$

Remark. Even though formulated as a two-predator one-prey model, one can think of the intertidal region and rename the states $0=$ bare rock, $1=$ barnacles, and $2,3=$ occupancy by two different types of mussels, which need the presence of barnacles to be able to attach to the rock. In this interpretation, it would be natural to have rates $\delta_{21}$ and $\delta_{31}$ for $2 \rightarrow 1$ and $3 \rightarrow 1$. However, even without this generalization, the analogy suggests that we should be able to get coexistence of the two predators when the diagonal terms $\gamma_{i i}$ are large.

The mean field ODE for our two-predator one-prey model is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-\delta_{1} u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{1} u_{2}-\beta_{3} u_{1} u_{3} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{1}-u_{2}\left(\delta_{2}+\gamma_{22} u_{2}+\gamma_{23} u_{3}\right) \\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =\beta_{3} u_{3} u_{1}-u_{3}\left(\delta_{3}+\gamma_{32} u_{2}+\gamma_{33} u_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which has the Lotka-Volterra form

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}-\beta_{1} u_{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) u_{2}-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) u_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{-\delta_{2}+\beta_{2} u_{1}-\gamma_{22} u_{2}-\gamma_{23} u_{3}\right\}  \tag{7.3.3}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{-\delta_{3}+\beta_{3} u_{1}-\gamma_{32} u_{2}-\gamma_{33} u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

To begin to analyze this system we note that if the 1's die out then all the other species will as well, so we must have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}>\delta_{1} \tag{7.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the faces $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ the ODE is of the predator-prey type. From (2.1.7) we see that 1 's and 2 's can coexist if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}}>\frac{\delta_{2}}{\beta_{2}} \tag{7.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and using (2.1.4) that in this case there is an attracting fixed point with coordinates

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{1}^{3} & =\frac{\gamma_{22}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \delta_{2}}{\gamma_{22} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \beta_{2}} \\
\sigma_{2}^{3} & =\frac{-\beta_{1} \delta_{2}+\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) \beta_{2}}{\gamma_{22} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \beta_{2}} \tag{7.3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Replacing all of the subscript 2's by 3's in the last two formulas, we see that 1 's and 2 's can coexist if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}}{\beta_{1}}>\frac{\delta_{3}}{\beta_{3}} \tag{7.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and in this case there is an attracting fixed point with coordinates

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{1}^{2} & =\frac{\gamma_{33}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \delta_{3}}{\gamma_{33} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \beta_{3}} \\
\sigma_{3}^{2} & =\frac{-\beta_{1} \delta_{3}+\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) \beta_{3}}{\gamma_{33} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \beta_{3}} \tag{7.3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Turning to the next level of competition, 3 's can invade the 1,2 equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\delta_{3}+\beta_{3} \sigma_{1}^{3}-\gamma_{32} \sigma_{2}^{3}>0 \tag{7.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

while 2 's can invade the 1,3 equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\delta_{2}+\beta_{2} \sigma_{1}^{2}-\gamma_{23} \sigma_{3}^{2}>0 \tag{7.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

In view of the result in (7.3.2) it is natural to ask if the conditions we have just introduced can all be satisfied simultaneously. To see that the answer is yes, consider the special case in which $\gamma_{23}=0$ and $\gamma_{32}=0$ then plug the equations for the densities given in (7.3.6) and (7.3.8) into the invadability conditions (7.3.9) and (7.3.10) to get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\delta_{3}+\beta_{3} \cdot \frac{\gamma_{22}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \delta_{2}}{\gamma_{22} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \beta_{2}}>0 \\
& -\delta_{2}+\beta_{2} \cdot \frac{\gamma_{33}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \delta_{3}}{\gamma_{33} \beta_{1}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right) \beta_{3}}>0
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\gamma_{22}=\gamma_{33}=0$ then these inequalities reduce to the mutually contradictory: $\delta_{2} / \beta_{2}>\delta_{3} / \beta_{3}$ and $\delta_{2} / \beta_{2}<\delta_{3} / \beta_{3}$. If $\gamma_{22}$ and $\gamma_{33}$ are large then two fractions are each close to $\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$, so it is clear that the two conditions can be satisfied simultaneously. Having shown that there is a nonempty set of examples we can now in good conscience state our result.

Theorem 7.5. Suppose (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \downarrow 0,3 \downarrow 0$,
(b) $2 \succ 1,3 \succ 1$, and (c) $3 \succ 1,2$, and $3 \succ 1,2$.

Then with fast stirring, we have coexistence in the one-prey, twopredator model.

Remark. Again $2 \downarrow 0$ and $3 \downarrow 0$ simply say that 2's and 3's are predators, while the other five conditions correspond to (7.3.4), (7.3.5), (7.3.7), (7.3.9), and (7.3.10)

Sketch of Proof. On the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ the fixed point is $(0,0)$ so we can use Proposition 4.3 to construct a repelling function for that face. Using Proposition 1.1 now we can extend to $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{23}^{0}$. This covers the problem regions for the other two faces so two uses of Proposition 4.1, give a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$.


Figure 7.6

Proof of Theorem 7.5. Following the outline in the sketch, the first step is:

Face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. In the absence of prey both predators have $d u_{i} / d t<0$ for $u_{i}>0$, so $f_{1}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}+u_{2}$ is a Lyapunov function which satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.3. Since $1 \succ 0$, (b) holds. Using Proposition 4.3 now, we see that if constants $\theta_{1}, \lambda_{1}, \eta_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $B_{1}$ are chosen correctly $h_{1}=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{1} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{1} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{1} \log u_{1}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1}<0 \quad \text { when } 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{1} \tag{7.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. We move now to the

Edge $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0} . \sigma_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$ is an attracting fixed point, so if we let $g_{1}(u)=u-\sigma_{1} \log u$ then (a) of Proposition 1.1 holds. Invadability conditions $2 \succ 1$ and $3 \succ 1$ imply that (b) holds when $z_{1}=u_{2}+u_{3}$. Using Proposition 1.1 now with $\epsilon_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if constants $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon_{2}, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{2}(u)=\left(\epsilon_{2}-u\right)^{+}$then

$$
h_{2}=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{2} \psi_{2}\left(u_{1}\right) z_{1}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log z_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{2}, 0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{2}, 0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.3.11). Thus if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d\left(K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}\right)}{d t} \leq-\nu_{2} \tag{7.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$ or $u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \eta_{2}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}$ is a repelling function for a face and an edge: $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$. We are now ready for the

Faces $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$. Here we have supercritical predator-prey systems, so Lemma 5.0 gives us Lyapunov functions $f_{3}$ and $f_{2}$ for these faces that satisfy (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The invadability conditions $3 \succ 1,2$ and $2 \succ 1,3$ imply that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1
now, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{3}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{3} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log u_{3} \tag{7.3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq B_{3}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{3}$. Another application of Proposition of 4.1, gives a function

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{4}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{4} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{4} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{2} \tag{7.3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq B_{4}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$. If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{4}$. Combining (7.3.12)-(7.3.14), we see that if $K_{3}$ is chosen large enough then $K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{3}+\bar{h}_{4}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 7.5 is complete.

From 2-predator and 1-prey we move now to:
Example 7.4. Two-infection model. The case in which susceptibles can be doubly infected is covered by Example 2.5 . Indeed the original motivation for Durrett and Neuhauser (1997) was to study the competition of different strains of the barley yellow dwarf virus. Thus, we will concentrate on the situation where individuals can have at most one type of infection. That is, our states are $0=$ removed, $1=$ susceptible, and $2=$ infected with strain 1 , and $3=$ infected with strain 2. Generalizing from Example 2 in the Introduction, but changing notation, we take the rates of the form

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
1 \rightarrow 2 & \gamma_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2} \\
1 \rightarrow 3 & \gamma_{3} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{3}
\end{array}
$$

Note that we have removed the spontaneous birth term, but now the 1's can die from other causes. The mean field ODE for this model is

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-u_{1}\left(\delta_{1}+\gamma_{2} u_{2}+\gamma_{3} u_{3}\right) \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\gamma_{2} u_{2} u_{1}-u_{2} \delta_{2}  \tag{7.4.1}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =\gamma_{3} u_{3} u_{1}-u_{3} \delta_{3}
\end{align*}
$$

The second and third equations have the form of two types feeding on the same resource, so adapting the proof of (7.3.2) gives.
(7.4.2) Suppose $\gamma_{2} / \delta_{2}>\gamma_{3} / \delta_{3}$. Then for any starting point in $\Gamma_{+}$we have $u_{3}(t) \rightarrow 0$.

Remark. In words, if we assume that the two strains are equally transmissible, i.e., $\gamma_{2}=\gamma_{3}$, this says that the less virulent strain, i.e., the one with the smaller $\delta_{i}$, wins the competition.

Proof. A little calculus shows

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left(-\gamma_{3} \log u_{2}+\gamma_{2} \log u_{3}\right)=\delta_{2} \gamma_{3}-\delta_{3} \gamma_{2}<0
$$

Integrating, letting $-\alpha=\delta_{2} \gamma_{3}-\delta_{3} \gamma_{2}$ and then exponentiating we have

$$
u_{2}(t)^{-\gamma_{3}} u_{3}(t)^{\gamma_{2}}=u_{2}(0)^{-\gamma_{3}} u_{3}(0)^{\gamma_{2}} e^{-\alpha t}
$$

Since $u_{2}(t) \leq 1$, it follows that $u_{3}(t) \leq C e^{-\alpha t / \gamma_{2}} \rightarrow 0$.
In order to allow for the possibility of coexistence, we will now generalize the model. Following Section 16.5 of Hofbauer and Sigmund (1998), we note that many parasites can be transmitted horizontally (through infection) and vertically (i.e., from parent to offspring). With this in mind we use the states introduced before but now take the rates of the form

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
0 \rightarrow 1 & \beta_{1} f_{1} & 1 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{1} \\
0 \rightarrow 2 & \beta_{2} f_{2} & 2 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{2} \\
0 \rightarrow 3 & \beta_{3} f_{3} & 3 \rightarrow 0 & \delta_{3} \\
1 \rightarrow 2 & \gamma_{2} f_{2} & 1 \rightarrow 3 & \gamma_{3} f_{3}
\end{array}
$$

The mean field ODE for this model is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{d u_{1}}{d t}=\beta_{1} u_{1} u_{0}-u_{1}\left(\delta_{1}+\gamma_{2} u_{2}+\gamma_{3} u_{3}\right) \\
& \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}=\beta_{2} u_{2} u_{0}+\gamma_{2} u_{2} u_{1}-u_{2} \delta_{2} \\
& \frac{d u_{3}}{d t}=\beta_{3} u_{3} u_{0}+\gamma_{3} u_{3} u_{1}-u_{3} \delta_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

which has the Lotka-Volterra form

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =u_{1}\left\{\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\beta_{1} u_{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{2}\right) u_{2}-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{3}\right) u_{3}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =u_{2}\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)+\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right) u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{2}-\beta_{2} u_{3}\right\}  \tag{7.4.3}\\
\frac{d u_{3}}{d t} & =u_{3}\left\{\left(\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}\right)+\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right) u_{1}-\beta_{3} u_{2}-\beta_{3} u_{3}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

To begin to analyze this system we note that unless

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}>\delta_{1} \tag{7.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

the whole system will collapse, while if (7.4.4) holds then in the absence of the two infections the susceptibles will reach a density $\sigma_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$. Infection 2 can invade this equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}+\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right) \sigma_{1}>0 \tag{7.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Likewise infection 3 can invade the 1's equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}+\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{1}>0 \tag{7.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

At this point there are several cases to consider. We expect to have the best success with coexistence when one epidemic survives by horizontal transmission and the other by vertical transmission since this corresponds to two ecologicial 'niches.' Thus we will suppose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}>0 \quad \text { and } \quad \beta_{3}-\delta_{3}<0 \tag{7.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

or invadability language that $2 \succ 0$ while $0 \succ 3$. When $\beta_{2}>\delta_{2}$, the 2's reach a density $\sigma_{2}=\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right) / \beta_{2}$ which can be invaded by the 1 's if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{2}\right) \sigma_{2}>0 \tag{7.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If, in addition, (7.4.5) holds then (2.1.4) implies there is an equilibrium with

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma_{1}^{3} & =\frac{\beta_{2}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)}{\beta_{1} \beta_{2}+\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{2}\right)\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right)} \\
\sigma_{2}^{3} & =\frac{\beta_{1}\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)+\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)}{\beta_{1} \beta_{2}+\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{2}\right)\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$, the system is of the predator-prey type, so using (2.1.4) again or more simply changing all the 2's to 3 's in the previous formula

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma_{1}^{2} & =\frac{\beta_{3}\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)\left(\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}\right)}{\beta_{1} \beta_{3}+\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{3}\right)\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right)} \\
\sigma_{3}^{2} & =\frac{\beta_{1}\left(\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}\right)+\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right)\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)}{\beta_{1} \beta_{3}+\left(\beta_{1}+\gamma_{3}\right)\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the face $\Gamma_{0}^{1}$, we have a competition model in which the 3 's lose to the 1 's. Turning now to the higher order competitions, 3 's can invade the 1,2 equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{3}-\delta_{3}+\left(\gamma_{3}-\beta_{3}\right) \sigma_{1}^{3}-\beta_{3} \sigma_{2}^{3}>0 \tag{7.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and 2 's can invade the 1,3 equilibrium if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}+\left(\gamma_{2}-\beta_{2}\right) \sigma_{1}^{2}-\beta_{2} \sigma_{2}^{3}>0 \tag{7.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining our calculations we have
Theorem 7.6. Suppose (a) $1 \succ 0,2 \succ 0,3 \downarrow 0$,
(b) $2 \succ 1,1 \succ 2,3 \succ 1,2 \gg 3$, and (c) $2 \succ 1,3$ and $3 \succ 1,2$.

Then there is coexistence for the two infection model with fast stirring.


Figure 7.7

Sketch of Proof. See Figure 7.7. As in the proof of Theorem 7.1, we let $z_{3}=u_{1}+u_{2}$ and

$$
h_{1}=\max \left\{u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{3}, M_{1}\right\}
$$

On the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ the fixed point has $\sigma_{2}^{1}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{1}=0$, so Proposition 4.2 , allows us to extend to $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$. This covers the problem regions for the remaining two faces, so two uses of Proposition 4.1 give a repelling function for $\Gamma^{0}$.

Proof of Theorem 7.6. Following the outline in the sketch, we begin with the

Edge $\Gamma_{12}^{0}$. In the absence of prey, the predators die out, so (a) of Proposition 1.2 holds. Let $z_{1}=u_{1}+u_{2}$. Since $1,2 \succ 0$, (b) holds. Applying Proposition 1.2, we see that if $\lambda_{1}, \nu_{1}$, and $\eta_{1}$ are chosen appropriately then $h_{1}(u)=u_{3}-\lambda_{1} \log z_{1}$ has

$$
\begin{equation*}
d h_{1} / d t \leq-\nu_{1} \quad \text { for } 0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1} \tag{7.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we pick $M_{1}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{1}=h_{1} \wedge M_{1}$ is only nontrivial when $0<z_{1} \leq \eta_{1}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{1}<\eta_{1}$ then we will have $h_{1}>M_{1}$ when $0<z_{1} \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$. We move now to the

Face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$. Here the ODE is a degenerate linear competition model with $\sigma_{2}^{1}>0$ and $\sigma_{3}^{1}=0$, so Lemma 5.2, gives us a Lyapunov function $f_{1}$ that satisfies (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.2. The condition $1 \succ 2$ implies that (b) holds. Using Proposition 4.2 now with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{1}$, we see that if constants $\theta_{2} \leq 1, \lambda_{2}, \eta_{2} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{2} \leq \nu_{1}$, and $B_{2}$ are chosen correctly

$$
h_{2}=f_{1}\left(u_{2}+\theta_{2} u_{1}, u_{3}+\theta_{2} u_{1}\right)-\lambda_{2} \log u_{1}
$$

has (i) $d h_{2} / d t \leq-\nu_{2}<0$ when $u_{2} \geq \epsilon, 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$ and (ii) $d h_{2} / d t \leq$ $B_{2}$ when $0 \leq u_{2} \leq \epsilon, 0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we pick $M_{2}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{2}=h_{2} \wedge M_{2}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{2}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{2}<\eta_{2}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{2} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.4.11). At this point we can also add the

Edge $\Gamma_{2,3}^{0} . \sigma_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$ is an attracting fixed point, so if we let $g_{1}(u)=u-\sigma_{1} \log u$ then (a) of Proposition 1.1 holds. Let $z_{3}=u_{2}+u_{3}$. The invadability conditions $2 \succ 1$ and $3 \succ 1$ imply that (b) holds.

Using Proposition 1.1 now with $\epsilon_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{2}$, we see that if constants $\theta_{3} \leq 1, \lambda_{3}, \eta_{3} \leq \epsilon_{3}, \nu_{3} \leq \nu_{2}$, and $B_{3}$ are chosen appropriately and $\psi_{3}(u)=\left(\eta_{3}-u\right)^{+2}$ then

$$
h_{3}(u)=g_{1}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{3} \psi_{3}\left(u_{1}\right) z_{2}\right)-\lambda_{3} \log z_{3}
$$

has (i) $d h_{3} / d t \leq-\nu_{3}<0$ when $u_{1} \geq \epsilon_{3}, 0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$ and (ii) $d h_{3} / d t \leq B_{3}$ when $0 \leq u_{1} \leq \epsilon_{3}, 0<z_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we pick $M_{3}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{3}=h_{3} \wedge M_{3}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. If we now take $\bar{\eta}_{3}<\eta_{3}$ then we will have $h_{2}>M_{2}$ when $0<u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$. Region (ii) is not a problem because of (7.4.11). Thus if we pick $K_{1} \geq 1$ large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d\left(K_{1} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}\right)}{d t} \leq-\nu_{3} \tag{7.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $u_{1} \leq \eta_{3}$ or $u_{2}+u_{3} \leq \eta_{3}$. In words, $j_{1}=K_{2} \bar{h}_{1}+\bar{h}_{2}+\bar{h}_{3}$ is a repelling function for a face and an edge: $\Gamma_{1}^{0} \cup \Gamma_{2,3}^{0}$. With this, we can complete the proof by adding the

Faces $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ and $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$. On the face $\Gamma_{2}^{0}$ we have a supercritical predator-prey system, while on the face $\Gamma_{3}^{0}$ we have a Case 2 competitive system. Thus, Lemmas 5.0 and 5.1 give us Lyapunov functions $f_{2}$ and $f_{3}$ for these faces that satisfy (a), (d), and (e) of Proposition 4.1. The invadability conditions $3 \succ 1,2$ and $2 \succ 1,3$ imply that (b) holds. Applying Proposition 4.1 now, with $\epsilon \leq \bar{\eta}_{3}$, we see that if $\theta_{4} \leq 1, \lambda_{4}$, $\eta_{4} \leq \epsilon, \nu_{4} \leq \nu_{3}$, and $B_{4}$ are chosen appropriately then

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{4}(u)=f_{3}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{4} u_{3}, u_{2}+\theta_{4} u_{3}\right)-\lambda_{4} \log u_{3} \tag{7.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{4} / d t \leq-\nu_{4}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{4}$ and (ii) $d h_{4} / d t \leq B_{4}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{2} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{3} \leq \eta_{4}$. If we pick $M_{4}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{4}=h_{4} \wedge M_{4}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{1} \leq \eta_{4}$.

Another application of Proposition of 4.1, gives a function

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{5}(u)=f_{2}\left(u_{1}+\theta_{5} u_{2}, u_{3}+\theta_{5} u_{2}\right)-\lambda_{5} \log u_{2} \tag{7.4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

has (i) $d h_{5} / d t \leq-\nu_{5}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \geq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{5}$ and (ii) $d h_{5} / d t \leq B_{5}$ when $u_{1} \wedge u_{3} \leq \epsilon$ and $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{5}$. If we pick $M_{5}$ large enough then the function $\bar{h}_{5}=h_{5} \wedge M_{5}$ is only nontrivial when $0<u_{2} \leq \eta_{5}$. Combining (7.4.12)-(7.4.14), we see that if $K_{2}$ is chosen large enough then $K_{2} j_{1}+\bar{h}_{4}+\bar{h}_{5}$ is a repelling function for $\Gamma_{0}$ and the proof of Theorem 7.6 is complete.
8. Some asymptotic results for our ODE and PDE. In this section we will give the proofs of Propositions 0 and 1 , and Theorem 6.3 .

Proof of Proposition 0. Let $\epsilon>\delta$, let $Q=\inf \{t: \phi(u(t)) \leq M+\delta\}$ be the quitting time from $\phi>M+\delta, R=\inf \{t \geq Q: \phi(u(t))>M+\epsilon\}$ be the time of the first return to $\phi>M+\epsilon$, and $T=\sup \{s \leq R$ : $\phi(u(t)) \leq M+\delta\}$. On $(T, R]$ we have $\phi(u(t))>M+\delta$, so $d \phi / d t<0$ leading to a contradiction

$$
0<\epsilon-\delta=\phi(u(R))-\phi(u(T))=\int_{T}^{R} \frac{d \phi}{d t}(u(s)) d s<0
$$

Thus, once $u(t)$ leaves $\{\phi>M+\delta\}$ it can never re-enter $\{\phi>M+\epsilon\}$ with $\epsilon>\delta$. To see that the ODE must leave $\{\phi>M+\delta\}$ in finite time note that by (ii) we have $d \phi(u(t)) / d t \leq-c_{\delta}<0$ while $\phi(u(t))>$ $M+\delta$, so we must have

$$
Q_{\delta} \leq\{\phi(u(0))-(M+\delta)\} / c_{\delta}
$$

To prove the second result, we use the obvious generalization of the previous idea: put the reaction-diffusion equation inside the repelling function. This time, however, it is useful to introduce a smooth enough truncation. Let $\psi(z)=0$ for $z \leq 0$, and let

$$
\psi(z)=\int_{0}^{z} \frac{y}{y+1} d y \text { for } z \geq 0
$$

It is immediate from the definition that $\psi^{\prime}$ is increasing so $\psi$ is convex and satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{z^{2}}{2} \leq \psi(z) \leq z \tag{8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\hat{\phi}(u)=\psi(\phi(u)-(M+\epsilon))$ be the truncated version of $\phi$.
Proof of Proposition 1. Let $h(t, x)=\hat{\phi}(u(t, x))$, where $u$ is a solution of

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t}=\Delta u_{i}+f_{i}(u) \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i \leq k \tag{8.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In what follows the indices $i$ and $j$ are in $[1, k]$, while the index $m \in$ $[1, d]$. Differentiating and using the equation in (8.2) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial h}{\partial t}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot \frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot\left(\Delta u_{i}+f_{i}(u)\right) \\
& \frac{\partial h}{\partial x_{m}}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot \frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial x_{m}} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} h}{\partial x_{m}^{2}}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot \frac{\partial^{2} u_{i}}{\partial x_{m}^{2}}+\sum_{i, j} \frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial x_{m}} \cdot \frac{\partial^{2} \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i} \partial u_{j}} \cdot \frac{\partial u_{j}}{\partial x_{m}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Summing the last equation for $1 \leq m \leq d$ and using $\hat{\phi}_{t}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} f_{i}(u)$ to denote the time derivative of $\hat{\phi}$ along solutions of the ODE gives

$$
\frac{\partial h}{\partial t}=\Delta h+\hat{\phi}_{t}-\sum_{m, i, j} \frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial x_{m}} \cdot \frac{\partial^{2} \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i} \partial u_{j}} \cdot \frac{\partial u_{j}}{\partial x_{m}}
$$

Being the composition of two convex functions $\hat{\phi}(u)=\psi(\phi(u)-(M+$ $\epsilon)$ ) is convex, so the last term (including the minus sign) is nonpositive and we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial h}{\partial t} \leq \Delta h+\hat{\phi}_{t} \tag{8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark. The calculation leading to (8.3) is simple but also very fragile. It breaks down for example if we consider unequal diffusion rates, since in that case

$$
\frac{\partial h}{\partial t}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot\left(\sigma_{i}^{2} \Delta u_{i}+f_{i}(u)\right)
$$

and we have no way to get $\sigma_{i}^{2}$ into the expression

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} h}{\partial x_{m}^{2}}=\sum_{i} \frac{\partial \hat{\phi}}{\partial u_{i}} \cdot \frac{\partial^{2} u_{i}}{\partial x_{m}^{2}}+\sum_{i, j} \ldots
$$

To prove Proposition 1 we need to show that if the initial condition $u(0, x) \in \Gamma$ is continuous, and has

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{i}(0, x) \geq \eta_{i}>0 \quad \text { when } \quad x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{2} \tag{8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

There are constants $\kappa>0$ and $t_{0}<\infty$, which only depend on $\eta_{i}, \delta$, and $\gamma$ so that

$$
h(t, x) \leq \gamma \quad \text { when } \quad|x| \leq \kappa t, \quad t \geq t_{0}
$$

To get upper bounds on $h(t, x)$, we note that the definition of $\psi$ and (ii) imply that when $\phi(u)>M+\epsilon$

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\phi}_{t} & =\psi^{\prime}(\phi(u)-(M+\epsilon)) \cdot \phi_{t} \\
& \leq-c_{\epsilon} \frac{\phi(u)-(M+\epsilon)}{1+\phi(u)-(M+\epsilon)} \leq-c_{\epsilon} \frac{\hat{\phi}(u)}{1+\hat{\phi}(u)} \tag{8.5}
\end{align*}
$$

since $\psi(u) \leq u$ and $z /(z+1)$ is increasing for $z \in[0, \infty)$. Our initial condition may have $h(0, x)=\infty$. To get things started we show

Lemma 8.1. There is a constant $K$ which only depends on the constants $\eta_{i}$ and $\delta$ in (8.4), so that if $t \geq 1$ and $|x| \leq t$ then $h(t, x) \leq$ $K t$.

Proof: Assumption (v) implies that $\frac{\partial u_{i}}{\partial t} \geq \Delta u_{i}-\alpha_{i} u_{i}$. Using Lemma 5.1.2 and the assumptions in (8.4) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{i}(t, x) & \geq e^{-\alpha_{i} t} \eta_{i} \int_{y \in[-\delta, \delta] d}(4 \pi t)^{-d / 2} e^{-|x-y|^{2} / 4 t} d y \\
& \geq e^{-\alpha_{i} t} \eta_{i} \cdot(2 \delta)^{d}(4 \pi t)^{-d / 2} \exp \left(-(|x|+\delta)^{2} / 4 t\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

We have $\phi(u) \leq C\left(1+\sum_{i=1}^{k} \log ^{-}\left(u_{i}\right)\right)$ by (iv), and the desired result follows.

Remark. If we instead use the bound $\phi(u) \leq C\left(1+\sum_{i=1}^{k} u_{i}^{-\rho}\right)$ where $\rho>0$ we end up with $h(t, x) \leq K e^{\gamma t}$ which is not good enough to satisfy the demands of Lemma 8.4.

Our SECOND STEP in the proof of Proposition 1 is to let $D_{r}=$ $\{y:|y|<r\}$ and define $h_{1}^{t}(t, x)$ to be the function with $h(s, x)=K s$ if $s=a t$, or $x \in \partial D_{a t}$ and

$$
\frac{\partial h}{\partial t}=\Delta h-c_{\epsilon} \frac{h}{1+h} \quad \text { in } \mathcal{D}_{t} \equiv[a t, t] \times D_{a t}
$$

Using Lemma 8.1 we see that $h(s, x) \leq h_{1}^{t}(s, x)$ when $s=a t$ or $x \in \partial D_{a t}$, so taking into account the inequality in (8.5) we should expect to find that

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(s, x) \leq h_{1}^{t}(s, x) \quad \text { for }(s, x) \in \mathcal{D}_{t} \tag{8.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

To prove this we use the following comparison result:
Lemma 8.2. Suppose $f_{1}(h) \geq f_{2}(h)$ and the $h_{i}$ solve

$$
\frac{\partial h_{i}}{\partial t}=\Delta h_{i}-f_{i}\left(h_{i}\right) \quad \text { in } \mathcal{D}_{t}
$$

with $h_{1}(s, x) \leq h_{2}(s, x)$ if $s=a t$, or $x \in \partial D_{a t}$ then

$$
h_{1}(s, x) \leq h_{2}(s, x) \quad \text { in } \mathcal{D}_{t}
$$

Proof. This type of conclusion usually goes under the name of the "maximum principle." However, the version we need is easier to prove than to find in the library. Suppose first that $f_{1}(h)>f_{2}(h)$ and $h_{1}(s, x)<h_{2}(s, x)$ if $s=a t$, or $x \in \partial D_{a t}$. Let $s_{0}$ be the smallest value of $s$ for which there is an $x$ with $h_{1}(s, x) \geq h_{2}(s, x)$. Continuity of the $h_{i}$ implies that we can find an $x_{0}$ so that $h_{1}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)=h_{2}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)$. The strict inequality between the $h_{i}$ on the boundary implies $x_{0} \in D_{a t}$ and $s_{0}>0$. The definition of $s_{0}$ implies that $h_{1}\left(s_{0}, x\right) \leq h_{2}\left(s_{0}, x\right)$ for all $x$. Since $h_{1}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)=h_{2}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)$, we must have $\nabla h_{1}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)=\nabla h_{2}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)$ and $\Delta h_{1}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right) \leq \Delta h_{2}\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)$. Using the last fact and $f_{1}(h)>f_{2}(h)$ it follows that at $\left(s_{0}, x_{0}\right)$

$$
\frac{\partial h_{1}}{\partial t}=\Delta h_{1}-f_{1}\left(h_{1}\right)<\Delta h_{2}-f_{2}\left(h_{2}\right)=\frac{\partial h_{2}}{\partial t}
$$

However this implies that $h_{1}\left(s_{0}-\epsilon, x\right)>h_{2}\left(s_{0}-\epsilon, x_{0}\right)$ for small $\epsilon$ contradicting the definition of $s_{0}$, so we must have $h_{1}(s, x)<h_{2}(s, x)$ for all $(s, x) \in \mathcal{D}_{a t}$. To prove the result in (2.4) now let $f_{0}(h)=$ $f_{1}(h)+\epsilon$ and change the boundary values to $h_{1}(s, x)-\epsilon$. The new solution $h_{0}^{\epsilon}(s, x)<h_{2}(s, x)$ and converges pointwise to $h_{1}(s, x)$ as $\epsilon \rightarrow 0$.

Our THIRD STEP is to bound $h_{1}^{t}(s, x)$ by $h_{2}^{t}(s, x)=w_{\text {Kat }}(s-a t)$ where $w_{q}(r)$ is the solution of

$$
w^{\prime}(t)=-c_{\epsilon} \cdot \frac{w}{1+w} \quad \text { with } \quad w(0)=q
$$

Lemma 8.3. If $|x| \leq a t / 2$ then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq h_{1}^{t}(t, x)-h_{2}^{t}(t, x) \leq(K+\alpha) t \cdot C e^{-\delta t} \tag{8.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. For the left-hand inequality we note that Lemma 8.2 implies $h_{1}^{t}(s, x) \geq h_{2}^{t}(s, x)$ in $\mathcal{D}_{t}$. To estimate the difference we let $\bar{g}(x)=$ $c_{\epsilon} x /(1+x)$ and observe that Itô's formula (see e.g., Section 4.2 of Durrett (1996)) implies that if $\tau=\inf \left\{s: B_{s} \notin D_{a t}\right\}$ then

$$
h_{i}^{t}\left(t-s \wedge \tau, B_{s \wedge \tau}\right)-\int_{0}^{s \wedge \tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{i}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r \quad s \leq(1-a) t
$$

is a bounded martingale. Using the martingale property at time $s=$ $(1-a) t$ gives that

$$
\begin{align*}
& h_{i}^{t}(t, x)=E_{x}( h_{i}^{t}\left(a t, B_{(1-a) t}\right) \\
&\left.-\int_{0}^{s \wedge \tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{i}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r ; \tau>(1-a) t\right) \\
&+E_{x}\left(h_{i}^{t}\left(t-\tau, B_{\tau}\right)\right.  \tag{8.8}\\
&\left.-\int_{0}^{s \wedge \tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{i}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r ; \tau \leq(1-a) t\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Since $h_{1}^{t}(a t, x)=h_{2}^{t}(a t, x)$ and $0 \leq h_{2}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right) \leq h_{1}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)$ for $\tau>r$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{1}^{t}\left(a t, B_{(1-a) t}\right) & -\int_{0}^{s \wedge \tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{1}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r \\
& \leq h_{2}^{t}\left(a t, B_{(1-a) t}\right)-\int_{0}^{s \wedge \tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{2}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r
\end{aligned}
$$

on $\{\tau>(1-a) t\}$. Subtracting the two expressions for $h_{i}^{t}(t, x)$ in (8.7) and recalling that $h_{i}^{t} \geq 0$ gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{1}^{t}(t, x)-h_{2}^{t}(t, x) & \leq 0+E_{x}\left(h_{1}^{t}\left(t-\tau, B_{\tau}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{\tau} \bar{g}\left(h_{2}^{t}\left(t-r, B_{r}\right)\right) d r ; \tau \leq(1-a) t\right) \\
& \leq(K+\alpha) t P_{x}(\tau \leq(1-a) t)
\end{aligned}
$$

since $h_{1}^{t}(s, x)=K s$ when $x \in \partial D_{a t}$ and $0 \leq \bar{g} \leq \alpha$. Standard large deviations estimates for Brownian motion imply that for $|x| \leq a t / 2$, $P_{x}(\tau<(1-a) t) \leq C \exp (-\delta t)$, which completes the proof.

Our FOURTH STEP is to investigate $w_{K a t}((1-a) t)$. Abstracting a little to simplify notation, we begin by considering the behavior of solutions of

$$
w^{\prime}=-\beta \cdot \frac{w}{1+w} \quad \text { with } \quad w(0)=W
$$

Lemma 8.4. Let $T_{\gamma}=\inf \{t: w(t) \leq \gamma\}$. There is a constant $C$ so that given $w \geq 2$ and $\gamma<1$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{(W-\gamma)}{\beta} \leq T_{\gamma} \leq \frac{W}{\beta}+C W^{1 / 2}\left(\log W^{1 / 2}-\log \gamma\right) \tag{8.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof of Proposition 1. From (8.9), we see that for fixed $\gamma$ as $W \rightarrow \infty$ the time to go from $W$ to $\gamma$ is $\sim W / \beta$. Thus if we pick $a$ so that $K a / \beta<1-a$ then for $t \geq t_{0}$ we will have $w_{\text {Kat }}((1-a) t) \leq \gamma$ and the proof of Proposition 1 is complete.

Proof of Lemma 8.4. Since $w^{\prime}(t) \geq-\beta$ we have $w(t) \geq W-\beta t$ and $T_{\gamma} \geq(W-\gamma) / \beta$. To prove the other bound, we observe that while $w(t) \geq W^{1 / 2}$,

$$
w^{\prime} \leq-\beta \frac{W^{1 / 2}}{1+W^{1 / 2}} \leq-\beta\left(1-W^{-1 / 2}\right)
$$

so $w(t)$ reaches level $W^{1 / 2}$ at a time

$$
\begin{equation*}
\leq \frac{W}{\beta\left(1-W^{-1 / 2}\right)} \leq \frac{W}{\beta}+C W^{1 / 2} \tag{8.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C$ is independent of $W \geq 2$. When $w(t) \leq W^{1 / 2}$ we have $w^{\prime} \leq-\beta w /\left\{1+W^{1 / 2}\right\}$ or integrating that

$$
w(t) \leq w(0) \exp \left(-\beta t /\left\{1+W^{1 / 2}\right\}\right)
$$

This implies that the time to go from level $W^{1 / 2}$ to $\gamma$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\leq \frac{1+W^{1 / 2}}{\beta} \cdot\left(\log W^{1 / 2}-\log \gamma\right) \tag{8.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Adding this to (8.10) gives the desired estimate. This completes the proof of Lemma 8.4 and hence the proof of Proposition 1.

Proof of Theorem 6.3. For simplicity, we will do the proof only for the two species Tilman model. The general case can be done with the same idea but with $n$ steps in the proof instead of 2 . We begin by recalling the mean field ODE given in (2.1.5):

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d u_{1}}{d t} & =\Delta u_{1}+u_{1}\left\{\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right)-\beta_{1} u_{1}\right\} \\
\frac{d u_{2}}{d t} & =\Delta u_{2}+u_{2}\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) u_{1}-\beta_{2} u_{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\rho_{1}=\left(\beta_{1}-\delta_{1}\right) / \beta_{1}$ and $\phi_{1}\left(u_{1}\right)=u_{1}-\rho_{1} \log u_{1} . \phi_{1}$ is a convex Lyapunov function, so Proposition 1 implies that given $\epsilon_{1}, \eta_{1}$, and $\delta$ there are constants $\kappa_{1}$ and $t_{1}$ so that if $u_{1}(0, x) \geq \eta_{1}>0$ when $x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{d}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|u_{1}(t, x)-\rho_{1}\right| \leq \epsilon_{1} \quad \text { when } \quad|x| \leq \kappa_{1} t, \quad t \geq t_{1} \tag{8.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\rho_{2}=\left\{\left(\beta_{2}-\delta_{2}\right)-\left(\beta_{1}+\beta_{2}\right) \sigma_{1}\right\} / \beta_{2}$ be the equilibrium density of 2's, let $\phi_{2}\left(u_{2}\right)=u_{2}-\sigma_{2} \log u_{2}$, and introduce the truncated version

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{2}\left(u_{2}\right)=\left(\phi_{2}\left(u_{2}\right)-\phi_{2}\left(\sigma_{2}\right)-\epsilon_{2}\right)^{+} \tag{8.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

that is flat near the fixed point. If the constant $\epsilon_{1}$ in the first step was chosen small enough, $\zeta_{2}$ will be a repelling function with $M=0$ when $\left|u_{1}(t, x)-\sigma_{1}\right| \leq \epsilon_{1}$. If we pick $a>0$ small enough then the region $\mathcal{D}_{t}=[a t, t] \times\{y:|y|<a t\}$ will for large $t$ lie inside the good region for (8.12): $\left\{(t, x):|x| \leq \kappa t, t \geq t_{0}\right\}$.

Introducing the smoothly truncated version $\hat{\zeta}_{2}=\psi\left(\zeta_{2}(u)-\epsilon_{3}\right)$, we have the differential inequality (8.3) and the estimate (8.5) from the proof of Proposition 1. The proofs of Lemmas 8.1-8.4 go through as before and we conclude that given $\epsilon_{2}, \eta_{2}$ and $\delta$ there are constants $\kappa_{2} \leq \kappa_{1}$ and $t_{2} \geq t_{1}$ so that if $u_{2}(0, x) \geq \eta_{2}>0$ when $x \in[-\delta, \delta]^{d}$ then

$$
\left|u_{2}(t, x)-\rho_{2}\right| \leq \epsilon_{2} \quad \text { when } \quad|x| \leq \kappa_{2} t, \quad t \geq t_{2}
$$

Combined with (8.12) this implies that ( $\star$ ) holds, so the desired result now follows from Proposition 2.

## A List of the Invadability Conditions

The first three definitions are for two dimensional systems only.
Definition 1. We say that 2's die out, and write $2 \downarrow 0$, if

$$
d u_{2} / d t<0 \quad \text { when } u_{1}=0 \text { and } u_{2}>0
$$

Definition 2. We say that 1 's equilibrate at density $\sigma_{1}$, and write $1 \rightarrow \sigma_{1}$, if

$$
u_{1}(t) \rightarrow \sigma_{1} \quad \text { as } t \rightarrow \infty \text { when } u_{2}=0 \text { and } u_{1}(0)>0
$$

Definition 3. We say that species 2 can invade species 1 in equilibrium, and write $2 \succ 1$, if as $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma_{1}, 0\right)$ inside $\Gamma^{+}$, we have

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{u_{2}} \frac{d u_{2}}{d t}>0
$$

Definition 4. We say that $i \succ 0$ if as $u \rightarrow 0$ inside $\Gamma_{+}$, we have

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{u_{i}} \frac{d u_{i}}{d t}>0
$$

Definition 5. We say that $2, \ldots n$ can invade 1 and write $2, \ldots n \succ 1$ if there is a positive linear combination $z=\omega_{2}^{1} u_{2}+\cdots+\omega_{n}^{1} u_{n}$ so that as $u \rightarrow\left(\sigma, 0_{n-1}\right)$ from inside $\Gamma^{+}$, we have

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{z} \frac{d z}{d t}>0
$$

The last two definitions are for three dimensional systems. Here $\{i, j, k\}=\{1,2,3\}$.

Definition 6. We say that $k$ can invade $i, j$ in equilibrium and write $k \succ i, j$ if as $u \rightarrow \sigma^{k}$ (the fixed point on the boundary $\Gamma_{k}^{0}$ ) inside $\Gamma_{+}$, we have

$$
\liminf \frac{1}{u_{k}} \frac{d u_{k}}{d t}>0
$$

Definition 7. $2 \gg 3$ means there is a convex Lyapunov function on the face $\Gamma_{1}^{0}$ that is decreasing whenever $u_{2}>0$.

## REFERENCES

Bacon, P.J., editor. (1985) The Population Dynamics of Rabies in Widlife, Academic Press, New York

Bailey, N.T.J. (1967) The simulation of stochastic epidemics in two dimensions. Proc. 5th Berkeley Symp. 4, 237-253

Bailey, N.T.J. (1975) The Mathematical Theory of Infectious Diseases. 2nd edition. Griffin, London

Bak, P., Chen, K., and Tang, C. (1990) A forest fire model and some thoughts on turbulence. Physics Letters, A. 147, 297-300

Bartlett, M.S. (1957) Measles, periodicity and community size. J. Roy. Stat. Soc., A 120, 48-70

Belbase, E. (1998) Coexistence in two species reaction diffusion processes using a hydrodynamic limit. Ph.D. Thesis, Cornell U.

Bramson, M., Durrett, R. and Swindle, G. (1989) Statistical mechanics of Crabgrass. Ann. Prob. 17, 444-481

Bramson, M. and Neuhauser, C. (1997) Coexistence for a catalytic surface model. Ann. Appl. Prob. 7, 565-614

Brown, D.B. and Hansel, R.I.C. (1987) Convergence to an evolutionary stable strategy in the two-policy game. Am. Nat. 130, 929940

Caswell, H. (1978) Predator-mediated coexistence: a non-equilibrium model. Amer. Natur. 112, 127-154

Caswell, H., and Etter, R.J. (1992) Ecological interactions in patchy environments. Pages 93-124 in Patch Dynamics edited by Levin, S.A., Powell, T., and Steele, J.H. Lecture Notes in Biomath, 96, Springer-Verlag

Comins, H.N., and Hassell, M.P. (1996) Persistence of multispecies host parasitoid interactions in spatially distributed models with local dispersal. J. theor. Biol. 183, 19-28

Cox, J.T. and Durrett, R. (1988) Limit theorems for the spread of epidemics and forest fires. Stoch. Proc. Appl. 30, 171-191

Cox, J.T., and Durrett, R. (1995) Hybrid zones and voter model interfaces. Bernoulli. 1, 343-370

Cox, J.T., and Schinazi, R. (1999) A stochastic process to model the persistence of sickle cell disease. Ann. Appl. Prob. 9, 319-330

Cramer, N.F. and May, R.M. (1972) Interspecific competition, predation and species diversity: a comment. J. theor. Biol. 34, 289-293

Crawley, M.J. and May, R.M. (1987) Population dynamics and plant community structure: competition between annuals and perennials. J. Theor. Biol. 125, 475-489

Crowley, P.H. (1979) Predator-mediated coexistence: an equilibrium interpretation. J. theor. Biol. 80, 129-144

De Roos, A.M., McCauley, E., and Wilson, W.G. (1991) Mobility versus density limited predator-prey dynamics on different spatial scales. Proc. Roy. Soc. London B 246, 117-122

Drossel, B. and Schwabl, F. (1992) Self-organized critical forest fire model. Phys. Rev. Letters. 69, 1629-1632

Durrett, R. (1992) Predator-prey systems. Pages $37-58$ in Asymptotic problems in probability theory: stochastic models and diffusions on fractals. Edited by K.D. Elworthy and N. Ikeda, Pitman Research Notes 83, Longman Scientific, Essex, England

Durrett, R. (1995a) Ten Lectures on Particle Systems. Ecole d'Eteé de Probabilités de Saint Flour, 1993. Lecture Notes in Math 1608, Springer, New York

Durrett, R. (1995b) Spatial epidemic models. Pages 187-201 in Epidemic Models: Their Structure and Relation to Data. Edited by D. Mollison. Cambridge U. Press

Durrett, R. (1996) Stochastic Calculus. CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL

Durrett, R., Buttel, L. and Harrison, R. (2000) Spatial models for hybrid zone evolution. Heredity. 84, 9-19

Durrett, R. and Levin, S.A. (1994) The importance of being discrete (and spatial). Theoret. Pop. Biol. 46, 363-394

Durrett, R., and Levin, S.A. (1996) From individuals to epidemics. Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc., B, 351, 1615-1621

Durrett, R. and Levin, S.A. (1997) Allelopathy in spatially distributed populations. J. Theor. Biol., 185, 165-172

Durrett, R. and Levin, S.A. (1998) Spatial aspects of interspecific competition. Theor. Pop. Biol. 53, 30-43

Durrett, R. and Levin, S.A. (2000) Pattern formation on planet WATOR. J. theor. Biol., 205, 201-214

Durrett, R. and Neuhauser, C. (1991) Epidemics with recovery in $d=2$. Ann. Applied Prob. 1, 189-206

Durrett, R. and Neuhauser, C. (1994) Particle systems and reaction diffusion equations. Ann. Probab. 22, 289-333

Durrett, R. and Neuhauser, C. (1997) Coexistence results for some competition models. Ann. Appl. Prob. 7, 10-45

Durrett, R. and Perkins, E. (1999) Rescaled contact processes converge to super-Brown -ian motion in two or more dimensions. Prob. Theor. Rel. Fields. 114, 309-399

Durrett, R. and Schinazi, R. (1993) Asymptotic critical value for a competition model. Ann. Applied. Prob. 3, 1047-1066

Durrett, R. and Swindle, G. (1991) Are there bushes in a forest? Stoch. Proc. Appl. 37, 19-31

Durrett, R., and Swindle, G. (1994) Coexistence results for catalysts. Prob. Th. Rel. Fields 98, 489-515

Fujii, K. (1977) Complexity-stability relationship of two-prey onepredator systems: local and global stability. J. theor. Biol. 69, 613-623

Gilpin, M.E. (1978). Limit cycles in competition communities. Am. Nat. 109, 51-60.

Grenfell, B.T. and Dobson, A.P. (1995) Ecology of Infectious Diseases in Natural Populations. Cambridge U. Press.

Haldane, J. (1949) Disease and evolution. Ricerca Sci. 19, 3-10

Hanski, I. (1998) Metapopulation dynamics. Nature 396, 41-49

Hanski, I.A. and Gilpin, M.E. (1996) Metapopulation Biology: Ecology, Genetics, and Evolution. Academic Press, New York

Hassell, M.P. (1978) The Dynamics of Arthropod Predator-Prey Systems. Monographs in Population Biology, 13, Princeton U. Press

Hassell, M.P., Comins, H.N., and May, R.M. (1991) Spatial structure and chaos in insect population dynamics. Nature. 353, 255-258

Hassell, M.P. and Wilson, H.B. (1997) The dynamics of spatially distributed host-parasitoid systmes. Pages $75-110$ in Spatial Ecology, edited by Tilman, D., and Kareiva, P., Princeton U. Press

Hastings, A., and Powell, T. (1981) Chaos in a three-species food chain. Ecology. 72, 896-903

Henley, C.L. (1993) Statics of a "self-organized" percolation model. Phys. Rev. Letters. 71, 2741-2744

Hilborn, R. (1975) The effect of spatial heterogeneity on the persistence of predator-prey interactions. Theor. Pop. Biol. 8, 346-355

Hofbauer, J. (1989) A unified approach to persistence. Acat Applicandae. Math. 14, 11-22

Hofbauer, J. and Sigmund, K. (1998) Evolutionary Games and Population Dynamics. Cambridge University Press

Holling, C.S. (1959) Some characteristics of simple types of predation and parasitism. Canadian Entomologist. 91, 385-398

Holmes, E.E. (1997) Basic epidemiological concepts in a spatial context. Pages 111-136 in Spatial Ecology, edited by Tilman, D., and Kareiva, P., Princeton U. Press

Hsu, S.B. (1981) Predator-mediated coexistence and extinction. Math. Biosci. 54, 231-248

Huffaker, C.B. (1958) Experimental studies on predation: Dispersion factors and predator prey oscillations. Hilgardia 27, 343-383

Huston, V., and Vickers, G.T. (1983) A criterion for permanent coexistence of species, with an application to two-prey one-predator system. Math. Biosci. 63, 253-269

Krone, S. (1999) The 2-stage contact process. Ann. Appl. Prob. 9, 331-351

May, R.M. (1994) Spatial chaos and its role in ecology and evolution. Pages 326-344 in Frontiers in Mathematical Biology. Lecture Notes in Biomathematics 100, Springer, New York

May, R.M. (1995) Necessity and chance: Deterministic chaos in ecology and evolution. Bulletin of the AMS., New Series, 32, 291-308

May, R.M. and Leonard, W.J. (1975). Nonlinear aspects of competition between species. SIAM J. of Applied Math 29, 243-253

May, R.M. and Nowak, M.A. (1994) Super-infection, meta-population dynamics, and the evolution of diversity. J. theor. Biol. 170, 95114

Maynard Smith, J. (1982) Evolution and the Theory of Games. Cambridge U. Press, Cambridge, England

McCauley, E., Wilson, W.G., and De Roos, A.M. (1993) Dynamics of age-structured predator-prey interactions:Individual based models and population level fromulations. Am. Nat. 142, 412-442

Mimura, M., and Fife, P.C. (1986) A 3-component system of competition and diffusion. Hiroshima Math J. 16, 189-207

Mimura, M., and Kan-on, Y. (1986) Predator-mediated coexistence and segregation structures. Pages 129-155 in Patterns and Waves: Qualitative Analysis of Nonlinear Differential Equations, edited by T. Nishida, M. Mimura, and K. Fujii. Kinokuniya, Tokyo

Mollison, D. (1972) The rate of spatial propagation of simple epidemics. Proc. 6th Berkeley Symp. 3, 579-614

Mollison, D. (1977) Spatial contact models for ecological and epidemic spread. J. Roy. Stat. Soc., B. 39, 283-326

Mollison, D. (1995) Epidemic Models: Their Structure and Relation to Data. Cambridge U. Press

Mollison, D. and Kuulasmaa, K. (1985) Spatial endemic models: theory and simulations. Pages 292-309 in The Population Dynamics of Rabies in Widlife, edited by P.J. Bacon. Academic Press, New York

Nachman, G. (1987a) Systems analysis of acarine predator prey interactions, I. A stochastic simulation model of spatial processes. J. Animal Ecology. 56, 247-265

Nachman, G. (1987b) Systems analysis of acarine predator prey interactions, II. The role of spatial processes in system stability. J. Animal Ecology. 56, 267-281

Neubert, M.G., Kot, M., and Lewis, M.A. (1995) Dispersal and pattern formation in a discrete-time predator-prey model. Theor. Pop. Biol. 48, 7-43

Neuhauser, C. (1992) Ergodic theorems for the multi-type contact process. Prob. Theor. Rel. Fields. 91, 467-506

Neuhauser, C. (1994) The long range sexual reproduction process. Stoch. Proc. Appl. 53, 193-220

Neuhauser, C., and Pacala, S.W. (1998) An explicitly spatial version of the Lotka-Volterra competition model with interspecific competition. Ann. Appl. Prob. 9, 1226-1259

Nicholson, A.J. and Bailey, V.A. (1935) The balance of animal populations. J. Animal Ecology 2, 132-178

Noble, C. (1992) Equilibrium behavior of the sexual reproduction process with rapid diffusion. Ann. Probab. 20, 724-745

Nowak, M.A., and May, R.M. (1992). Evolutionary games and spatial chaos. Nature 359, 826-829

Nowak, M.A., and May, R.M. (1993). The spatial dilemmas of evolution. Int. J. Bifurcation and Chaos. 3, 35-78

Nowak, M.A., Bonhoeffer, S., and May, R.M. (1994). More spatial games. Int. J. Bifurcation and Chaos. 4, 33-56

Paine, R.T. (1966) Food web complexity and species diversity. Amer. Nat. 100, 65-75

Parrish, J.D., and Saila, S.B. (1970) Interspecific competition, predation, and species diversity. J. theor. Biol. 27, 207-??

Pascual, M. and Caswell, H. (1997) Environmental heterogeneity and biologicial pattern in a chaotic predator-prey system. J. Theor. Biol. 185, 1-13

Perrut, A. (2000) Hydrodynamical limits for a two-species reaction diffusion process. Ann. Appl. Prob. 10, 163-191

Pimentel, D., Nagle, W.P., and Madden, J.L. (1963) Space-time structure of the environment and the survival of parasite-host systems. Am. Nat. 98, 141-167

Rand, D.A., Keeling, M., and Wilson, H.B. (1995) Invasion stability and evolution to criticality in spatially extended, artificial hostpathogen ecologies. Proc. Roy. Soc. London. B 259, 55-63

Renshaw, E. (1991) Modelling Biological Populations in Space and Time. Cambridge U. Press

Satulovsky, J. and Tome, T. (1994) Stochastic lattice gas model for a predator-prey system. Phys. Rev. E. 49, 5073-5079

Schlögl, F. (1972) Chemical reaction models for non-equilibrium phase transitions. Z. Physik 253, 147-161

Schinazi, R.B. (1996) A predator-prey and a host-parasite spatial stochastic models. Preprint.

Schinazi, R.B. (1998) Interacting particle systems modelling competition. Preprint.

Shah, N. (1997) Predator-mediated coexistence. Ph.D. Thesis, Cornell $U$.

Shigesada, N. and Kawasaki, K. (1997) Biological Invasions: Theory and Practice Oxford U. Press

Silvertown, J., Holtier, S., Johnson, J. and Dale, P. (1992). Cellular automaton models of interspecific competition for space - the effect of pattern on process. J. Ecol. 80, 527-534

Swindle, G. (1988) A hydrodynamic limit for the contact process with large range. Ph.D. thesis, Cornell U.

Takeuchi, Y. and Adachi, N. (1983) Existence and bifurcation of stable equilibria in two-prey, one-predator communities. Bull. Math. Biology 45, 877-900

Thrall, Peter H., and Burdon, Jeremy J. (1997) Host-pathogen dynamics in a meta-population context: the ecological and evolutionary consequences of being spatial. J. of Ecology. 85, 743-753

Tilman, D. (1994) Competition and bio-diversity in spatially structured habits. Ecology. 75, 2-16

Tilman, D. and Kareiva, P. (1997) Spatial Ecology. Monographs in Population Biology, Princeton University Press.

Vance, R.R. (1978) Predation and resource partitioning in one predator two-prey communities. Amer. Natur. 112, 797-813

Wilson, W.G. (1996) Lotka's game in predator-prey: linking individuals to theory. Theoret. Pop. Biol. 50, 368-393

Wilson, W.G., De Roos, A.M., and McCauley, E. (1993) Spatial instabilities within the diffusive Lotka-Volterra system: Individual based simulation results. Theoret. Pop. Biol. 43, 91-127

Zhang, Y. (1990) A shape theorem for finite range epidemics and forest fires. Ann. Prob. 21, 1755-1781

## Editorial Information

To be published in the Memoirs, a paper must be correct, new, nontrivial, and significant. Further, it must be well written and of interest to a substantial number of mathematicians. Piecemeal results, such as an inconclusive step toward an unproved major theorem or a minor variation on a known result, are in general not acceptable for publication. Papers appearing in Memoirs are generally longer than those appearing in Transactions, which shares the same editorial committee.

As of November 30, 2001, the backlog for this journal was approximately 6 volumes. This estimate is the result of dividing the number of manuscripts for this journal in the Providence office that have not yet gone to the printer on the above date by the average number of monographs per volume over the previous twelve months, reduced by the number of volumes published in four months (the time necessary for preparing a volume for the printer). (There are 6 volumes per year, each containing at least 4 numbers.)

A Consent to Publish and Copyright Agreement is required before a paper will be published in the Memoirs. After a paper is accepted for publication, the Providence office will send a Consent to Publish and Copyright Agreement to all authors of the paper. By submitting a paper to the Memoirs, authors certify that the results have not been submitted to nor are they under consideration for publication by another journal, conference proceedings, or similar publication.

## Information for Authors

Memoirs are printed from camera copy fully prepared by the author. This means that the finished book will look exactly like the copy submitted.

The paper must contain a descriptive title and an abstract that summarizes the article in language suitable for workers in the general field (algebra, analysis, etc.). The descriptive title should be short, but informative; useless or vague phrases such as "some remarks about" or "concerning" should be avoided. The abstract should be at least one complete sentence, and at most 300 words. Included with the footnotes to the paper should be the 2000 Mathematics Subject Classification representing the primary and secondary subjects of the article. The classifications are accessible from www. ams.org/msc/. The list of classifications is also available in print starting with the 1999 annual index of Mathematical Reviews. The Mathematics Subject Classification footnote may be followed by a list of key words and phrases describing the subject matter of the article and taken from it. Journal abbreviations used in bibliographies are listed in the latest Mathematical Reviews annual index. The series abbreviations are also accessible from www.ams.org/publications/. To help in preparing and verifying references, the AMS offers MR Lookup, a Reference Tool for Linking, at www.ams.org/mrlookup/. When the manuscript is submitted, authors should supply the editor with electronic addresses if available. These will be printed after the postal address at the end of the article.

Electronically prepared manuscripts. The AMS encourages electronically prepared manuscripts, with a strong preference for $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{M} \mathcal{S} \text {-LATEX. To this end, the Soci- }}^{\text {L }}$ ety has prepared $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{M}} \mathcal{S}^{-15 T} \mathrm{~T}_{\mathrm{E}} \mathrm{C}$ author packages for each AMS publication. Author packages include instructions for preparing electronic manuscripts, the AMS Author Handbook, samples, and a style file that generates the particular design specifications of that publication series. Though $\mathcal{A} \mathcal{M} \mathcal{S}$-EATEX is the highly preferred format of $\mathrm{T}_{\mathrm{E}}$, author packages are also available in $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{M}} \mathcal{S}-\mathrm{T}_{\mathrm{E}} \mathrm{X}$.

Authors may retrieve an author package from e-MATH starting from www.ams.org/tex/ or via FTP to ftp.ams.org (login as anonymous, enter username as password, and type cd pub/author-info). The AMS Author Handbook and the Instruction Manual are available in PDF format following the author packages link from www.ams.org/tex/. The author package can be obtained free of charge by sending email to pub@ams.org (Internet) or from the Publication Division, American Mathematical Society, P.O. Box 6248, Providence, RI 02940-6248. When requesting an author package, please specify $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{M}} \mathcal{S}^{-L A T} \mathrm{~T}_{\mathrm{E}}$ or $\mathcal{A} \mathcal{M} \mathcal{S}$-TEX, Macintosh or IBM (3.5) format, and the publication in which your paper will appear. Please be sure to include your complete mailing address.

Sending electronic files. After acceptance, the source file(s) should be sent to the Providence office (this includes any $\mathrm{T}_{\mathrm{E}} \mathrm{X}$ source file, any graphics files, and the DVI or PostScript file).

Before sending the source file, be sure you have proofread your paper carefully. The files you send must be the EXACT files used to generate the proof copy that was accepted for publication. For all publications, authors are required to send a printed copy of their paper, which exactly matches the copy approved for publication, along with any graphics that will appear in the paper.

TEX files may be submitted by email, FTP, or on diskette. The DVI file(s) and PostScript files should be submitted only by FTP or on diskette unless they are encoded properly to submit through email. (DVI files are binary and PostScript files tend to be very large.)

Electronically prepared manuscripts can be sent via email to pub-submit@ams.org (Internet). The subject line of the message should include the publication code to identify it as a Memoir. TEX source files, DVI files, and PostScript files can be transferred over the Internet by FTP to the Internet node e-math.ams.org (130.44.1.100).

Electronic graphics. Comprehensive instructions on preparing graphics are available at www.ams.org/jourhtml/graphics.html. A few of the major requirements are given here.

Submit files for graphics as EPS (Encapsulated PostScript) files. This includes graphics originated via a graphics application as well as scanned photographs or other computer-generated images. If this is not possible, TIFF files are acceptable as long as they can be opened in Adobe Photoshop or Illustrator. No matter what method was used to produce the graphic, it is necessary to provide a paper copy to the AMS.

Authors using graphics packages for the creation of electronic art should also avoid the use of any lines thinner than 0.5 points in width. Many graphics packages allow the user to specify a "hairline" for a very thin line. Hairlines often look acceptable when proofed on a typical laser printer. However, when produced on a high-resolution laser imagesetter, hairlines become nearly invisible and will be lost entirely in the final printing process.

Screens should be set to values between $15 \%$ and $85 \%$. Screens which fall outside of this range are too light or too dark to print correctly. Variations of screens within a graphic should be no less than $10 \%$.

Inquiries. Any inquiries concerning a paper that has been accepted for publication should be sent directly to the Electronic Prepress Department, American Mathematical Society, P. O. Box 6248, Providence, RI 02940-6248.

## Editors

This journal is designed particularly for long research papers, normally at least 80 pages in length, and groups of cognate papers in pure and applied mathematics. Papers intended for publication in the Memoirs should be addressed to one of the following editors. In principle the Memoirs welcomes electronic submissions, and some of the editors, those whose names appear below with an asterisk $\left({ }^{*}\right)$, have indicated that they prefer them. However, editors reserve the right to request hard copies after papers have been submitted electronically. Authors are advised to make preliminary email inquiries to editors about whether they are likely to be able to handle submissions in a particular electronic form.

Algebra to KAREN E. SMITH, Department of Mathematics, University of Michigan, 525 University, Suite 2832, Ann Arbor, MI 48109-1109; email: kesmith@lsa.umich.edu

Algebraic geometry and commutative algebra to LAWRENCE EIN, Department of Mathematics, University of Illinois, 851 S. Morgan (M/C 249), Chicago, IL 60607-7045; email: ein@ uic.edu

Algebraic topology and cohomology of groups to STEWART PRIDDY, Department of Mathematics, Northwestern University, 2033 Sheridan Road, Evanston, IL 60208-2730; email: priddy@math.nwu.edu

Combinatorics and Lie theory to SERGEY FOMIN, Department of Mathematics, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan 48109-1109; email: fomin@math.lsa.umich.edu

Complex analysis and complex geometry to DUONG H. PHONG, Department of Mathematics, Columbia University, 2990 Broadway, New York, NY 10027-0029; email: phong@ math.columbia.edu
${ }^{*}$ Differential geometry and global analysis to LISA C. JEFFREY, Department of Mathematics, University of Toronto, 100 St. George St., Toronto, ON Canada M5S 3G3; email: jeffrey@math.toronto.edu
*Dynamical systems and ergodic theory to ROBERT F. WILLIAMS, Department of Mathematics, University of Texas, Austin, Texas 78712-1082; email: bob@math.utexas.edu

Functional analysis and operator algebras to DAN VOICULESCU, Department of Mathematics, University of California, Berkeley, 970 Evans Hall, Floor 9, Berkeley, CA 94720-0001; email: dvv@math.berkeley.edu

Geometric topology, knot theory and hyperbolic geometry to ABIGAIL A. THOMPSON, Department of Mathematics, University of California, Davis, Davis, CA 95616-5224; email: thompson@math.ucdavis.edu

Harmonic analysis, representation theory, and Lie theory to ROBERT J. STANTON, Department of Mathematics, The Ohio State University, 231 West 18 th Avenue, Columbus, OH 43210-1174; email: stanton@math.ohio-state.edu
*Logic to THEODORE SLAMAN, Department of Mathematics, University of California, Berkeley, CA 94720-3840; email: slaman@math. berkeley.edu

Number theory to HAROLD G. DIAMOND, Department of Mathematics, University of Illinois, 1409 W. Green St., Urbana, IL 61801-2917; email: diamond@math. uiuc.edu
*Ordinary differential equations, partial differential equations, and applied mathematics to PETER W. BATES, Department of Mathematics, Brigham Young University, 292 TMCB, Provo, UT 84602-1001; email: peter@math.byu.edu
*Probability and statistics to KRZYSZTOF BURDZY, Department of Mathematics, University of Washington, Box 354350, Seattle, Washington 98195-4350; email: burdzy@ math.washington.edu
*Real and harmonic analysis and geometric partial differential equations to WILLIAM BECKNER, Department of Mathematics, University of Texas, Austin, TX 78712-1082; email: beckner@math.utexas.edu

All other communications to the editors should be addressed to the Managing Editor, WILLIAM BECKNER, Department of Mathematics, University of Texas, Austin, TX 787121082; email: beckner@math.utexas.edu.

## This page intentionally left blank

## Selected Titles in This Series

(Continued from the front of this publication)
710 Brian Marcus and Selim Tuncel, Resolving Markov chains onto Bernoulli shifts via positive polynomials, 2001
709 B. V. Rajarama Bhat, Cocylces of CCR flows, 2001
708 William M. Kantor and Ákos Seress, Black box classical groups, 2001
707 Henning Krause, The spectrum of a module category, 2001
706 Jonathan Brundan, Richard Dipper, and Alexander Kleshchev, Quantum Linear groups and representations of $G L_{n}\left(\mathbb{F}_{q}\right), 2001$
705 I. Moerdijk and J. J. C. Vermeulen, Proper maps of toposes, 2000
704 Jeff Hooper, Victor Snaith, and Min van Tran, The second Chinburg conjecture for quaternion fields, 2000
703 Erik Guentner, Nigel Higson, and Jody Trout, Equivariant E-theory for $C^{*}$-algebras, 2000
702 Ilijas Farah, Analytic guotients: Theory of liftings for quotients over analytic ideals on the integers, 2000
701 Paul Selick and Jie Wu, On natural coalgebra decompositions of tensor algebras and loop suspensions, 2000
700 Vicente Cortés, A new construction of homogeneous quaternionic manifolds and related geometric structures, 2000
699 Alexander Fel'shtyn, Dynamical zeta functions, Nielsen theory and Reidemeister torsion, 2000
698 Andrew R. Kustin, Complexes associated to two vectors and a rectangular matrix, 2000
697 Deguang Han and David R. Larson, Frames, bases and group representations, 2000
696 Donald J. Estep, Mats G. Larson, and Roy D. Williams, Estimating the error of numerical solutions of systems of reaction-diffusion equations, 2000
695 Vitaly Bergelson and Randall McCutcheon, An ergodic IP polynomial Szemerédi theorem, 2000
694 Alberto Bressan, Graziano Crasta, and Benedetto Piccoli, Well-posedness of the Cauchy problem for $n \times n$ systems of conservation laws, 2000
693 Doug Pickrell, Invariant measures for unitary groups associated to Kac-Moody Lie algebras, 2000
692 Mara D. Neusel, Inverse invariant theory and Steenrod operations, 2000
691 Bruce Hughes and Stratos Prassidis, Control and relaxation over the circle, 2000
690 Robert Rumely, Chi Fong Lau, and Robert Varley, Existence of the sectional capacity, 2000
689 M. A. Dickmann and F. Miraglia, Special groups: Boolean-theoretic methods in the theory of quadratic forms, 2000
688 Piotr Hajłasz and Pekka Koskela, Sobolev met Poincaré, 2000
687 Guy David and Stephen Semmes, Uniform rectifiability and quasiminimizing sets of arbitrary codimension, 2000
686 L. Gaunce Lewis, Jr., Splitting theorems for certain equivariant spectra, 2000

For a complete list of titles in this series, visit the AMS Bookstore at www.ams.org/bookstore/.

ISBN 0-82lı-2768-5
 (20) Copyright 2002 American Mathematical Society. Duplication prohibited. Please report unauthorized use to cust-serv@ams.org. Thank You! Your purchase supports the AMS' mission, programs, and services for the mathematical community.


[^0]:    March 2002 • Volume 156 • Number 740 (first of 5 numbers) • ISSN 0065-9266

[^1]:    Purchased from American Mathematical Society for the exclusive use of Richard Durrett (DRRCTJ)
    Copyright 2002 American Mathematical Society. Duplication prohibited. Please report unauthorized use to cust-serv@ams.org. Thank You! Your purchase supports the AMS' mission, programs, and services for the mathematical community.

[^2]:    Purchased from American Mathematical Society for the exclusive use of Richard Durrett (DRRCTJ)
    Copyright 2002 American Mathematical Society. Duplication prohibited. Please report unauthorized use to cust-serv@ams.org. Thank You! Your purchase supports the AMS' mission, programs, and services for the mathematical community.

